AMELIA.

BY

HENRY FIELDING, Esq.

IN THREE VOLUMES.

EMBELLISHED WITH ENGRAVINGS.

VOL. I.

FELICES TER ET AMPLIUS,
QUOS IRRUPTA TENET COPULA.

Γυναικὸς οὐδὲν χρῆμ' ἀνὴρ λαΐζεται
Ἐσθλῆς ἄμεινον, οὐδὲ ῥίγιον κακῆς.

LONDON:
PRINTED FOR C. COOK, No. 17,
PATER-NOSTER-ROW.

BRITISH MUSEUM

TO

RALPH ALLEN, Esq.

SIR,

THE following book is ſincerely deſigned to promote the cauſe of virtue, and to expoſe ſome of the moſt glaring evils, as well public as private, which at preſent infeſt the country; though there is ſcarce, as I remember, a ſingle ſtroke of ſatire aimed at any one perſon throughout the whole.

The beſt man is the propereſt patron of ſuch an attempt. This, I believe, will be readily granted; nor will the publick voice, I think, be more divided, to whom they ſhall give that appellation. Should a letter, indeed, be thus inſcribed, DETUR OPTIMO, there are few perſons who would think it wanted any other direction.

I will not trouble you with a preface concerning the work; nor endeavour to obviate any criticiſms which may be made on it. The good-natured reader, if his heart ſhould be here affected, will be inclined to pardon many faults for the pleaſure he will receive from a tender

ſenſation; and for readers of a different ſtamp, the more faults they can diſcover, the more, I am convinced, they will be pleaſed.

Nor will I aſſume the fulſome ſtile of common dedicators. I have not their uſual deſign in this epiſtle; nor will I borrow their language. Long, very long, may it be, before a moſt dreadful circumſtance ſhall make it poſſible for any pen to draw a juſt and true character of yourſelf, without incurring a ſuſpicion of flattery in the boſoms of the malignant! This taſk, therefore, I ſhall defer till that day (if I ſhould be ſo unfortunate as ever to ſee it) when every good man ſhall pay a tear for the ſatisfaction of his curioſity; a day which at preſent, I believe, there is but one good man in the world who can think of with unconcern.

Accept then, Sir, this ſmall token of that love, that gratitude, and that reſpect, with which I ſhall always eſteem it my GREATEST HONOUR to be,

SIR,

Your moſt obliged,
And moſt obedient,
Humble Servant,

HENRY FIELDING.

BOW STREET,
DECEMBER 12, 1751.

AMELIA.

BOOK I.

CHAP. I.

Containing the exordium, &c.

THE various accidents which befel a very worthy couple, after their uniting in the ſtate of matrimony, will be the ſubject of the following hiſtory. The diſtreſſes which they waded through, were ſome of them ſo exquiſite, and the incidents which produced theſe ſo extraordinary, that they ſeemed to require not only the utmoſt malice, but the utmoſt invention which ſuperſtition hath ever attributed to FORTUNE: though whether any ſuch being interfered in the caſe, or indeed, whether there be any ſuch being in the univerſe, is a matter which I by no means preſume to determine in the affirmative. To ſpeak a bold truth, I am, after much mature deliberation, inclined to ſuſpect, that the public voice hath, in all ages, done much injuſtice to Fortune, and hath convicted her of many facts in which ſhe had not the leaſt concern. I queſtion much whether we may not, by natural means, account for the ſucceſs of knaves, and the calamities of fools, with all the miſeries in which men of ſenſe ſometimes involve themſelves, by quitting the directions of prudence, and following the blind guidance of a predominant paſſion: in ſhort, for all the ordinary phenomena which are imputed to Fortune; whom, perhaps, men accuſe with no leſs abſurdity in life, than a bad player complains of ill luck at a game of cheſs.

But if men are ſometimes guilty of laying improper blame on this imaginary being, they are altogether as apt to make her amends, by aſcribing to her honours which ſhe as little deſerves. To retrieve the

ill conſequences of a fooliſh conduct, and by ſtruggling manfully with diſtreſs to ſubdue it, is one of the nobleſt efforts of wiſdom and virtue: whoever, therefore, calls ſuch a man fortunate, is guilty of no leſs impropriety in ſpeech, than he would be, who ſhould call the ſtatuary or the poet fortunate, who carved a Venus, or who wrote an Iliad.

Life may as properly be called an art as any other; and the great incidents in it are no more to be conſidered as mere accidents, than the ſeveral members of a fine ſtatue, or a noble poem. The critics in all theſe are not content with ſeeing any thing to be great, without knowing why and how it came to be ſo. By examining carefully the ſeveral gradations which conduce to bring every model to perfection, we learn truly to know that ſcience in which the model is formed: as hiſtories of this kind, therefore, may properly be called models of HUMAN LIFE; ſo by obſerving minutely the ſeveral incidents which tend to the cataſtrophe or completion of the whole, and the minute cauſes whence thoſe incidents are produced, we ſhall beſt be inſtructed in this moſt uſeful of all arts, which I call *the art of life*.

CHAP. II.

The Hiſtory ſets out. Obſervations on the excellency of the Engliſh Conſtitution; and curious examinations before a Juſtice of Peace.

ON the firſt of April in the year ------, the watchmen of a certain pariſh (I know not particularly which) within the liberty of Weſtminſter, brought ſeveral perſons, whom they had apprehended the preceding night, before Jonathan Thraſher, Eſq. one of the juſtices of the peace for that liberty.

But here, reader, before we proceed to the trials of theſe offenders, we ſhall, after our uſual manner, premiſe ſome things which it may be neceſſary for thee to know.

It hath been obſerved, I think, by many, as well as the celebrated writer of *Three Letters*, that no human

human inſtitution is capable of conſummate perfection. An obſervation which, perhaps, that writer at leaſt gathered from diſcovering ſome defects in the polity even of this well-regulated nation. And, indeed, if there ſhould be any ſuch defect in a conſtitutution which my Lord Coke long ago told us, 'the 'wiſdom of all the wiſe men in the world, if they had 'all met together at one time, could not have equal-'led;' which ſome of our wiſeſt men, who were met together long before, ſaid, was too good to be altered in any particular; and which, nevertheleſs, hath been mending ever ſince, by a very great number of the ſaid wiſe men: if, I ſay, this conſtitution ſhould be imperfect, we may be allowed, I think, to doubt whether any ſuch faultleſs model can be found among the inſtitutions of men.

It will probably be objected, that the ſmall imperfections which I am about to produce do not lie in the laws themſelves, but in the ill execution of them; but, with ſubmiſſion, this appears to me to be no leſs an abſurdity, than to ſay of any machine that it is excellently made, though incapable of performing it's functions. Good laws ſhould execute themſelves in a well-regulated ſtate: at leaſt, if the ſame legiſlature which provides the laws doth not provide for the execution of them, they act as Graham would do, if he ſhould form all the parts of a clock in the moſt exquiſite manner, yet put them ſo together that the clock could not go. In this caſe, ſurely we might ſay, that there was a ſmall defect in the conſtitution of the clock.

To ſay the truth, Graham would ſoon ſee the fault, and would eaſily remedy it. The fault, indeed, could be no other, than that the parts were improperly diſpoſed.

Perhaps, reader, I have another illuſtration, which will ſet my intention in ſtill a clearer light before you. Figure to yourſelf then a family, the maſter of which ſhould diſpoſe of the ſeveral œconomical offices in the following

following manner, viz. ſhould put his butler in the coach-box, his ſteward behind his coach, his coachman in the butlery, and his footman in the ſtewardſhip; and in the ſame ridiculous manner ſhould miſemploy the talents of every other ſervant; it is eaſy to ſee what a figure ſuch a family muſt make in the world.

As ridiculous as this may ſeem, I have often conſidered ſome of the lower offices in our civil government to be diſpoſed of in this very manner. To begin, I think, as low as I well can, with the watchmen in our metropolis; who being to guard our ſtreets by night from thieves and robbers, an office which at leaſt requires ſtrength of body, are choſen out of thoſe poor, old, decrepid people, who are, from their want of bodily ſtrength, rendered incapable of getting a livelihood by work. Theſe men, armed only with a pole, which ſome of them are ſcarce able to lift, are to ſecure the perſons and houſes of his majeſty's ſubjects from the attacks of gangs of young, bold, ſtout, deſperate, and well-armed villains.

Quæ non viribus iſtis
Munera conveniunt.

If the poor old fellows ſhould run away from ſuch enemies, no one, I think, can wonder; unleſs it be, that they were able to make their eſcape.

The higher we proceed among our public officers and magiſtrates, the leſs defects of this kind will, perhaps, be obſervable. Mr. Thraſher, however, the juſtice before whom the priſoners above-mentioned were now brought, had ſome few imperfections in his magiſtratical capacity. I own, I have been ſometimes inclined to think, that this office of a juſtice of peace requires ſome knowledge of the law; for this ſimple reaſon, becauſe in every caſe which comes before him, he is to judge and act according to law. Again, as theſe laws are contained in a great variety of books, the ſtatutes which relate to the office of a juſtice of peace, making of themſelves at leaſt two large

large volumes in folio; and that part of his juriſdiction which is founded on the common law being diſperſed in above a hundred volumes, I cannot conceive how this knowledge ſhould be acquired without reading; and yet, certain it is, Mr. Thraſher never read one ſyllable of the matter.

This perhaps was a defect; but this was not all: for where mere ignorance is to decide a point between two litigants, it will always be an even chance whether it decides right or wrong; but ſorry am I to ſay, right was often in a much worſe ſituation than this, and wrong hath often had five hundred to one on his ſide before that magiſtrate; who, if he was ignorant of the law of England, was yet well verſed in the laws of nature. He perfectly well underſtood that fundamental principle ſo ſtrongly laid down in the Inſtitutes of the learned Rochefaucault, by which the duty of ſelf-love is ſo ſtrongly enforced, and every man is taught to conſider himſelf as the centre of gravity, and to attract all things thither. To ſpeak the truth plainly, the juſtice was never indifferent in a cauſe, but when he could get nothing on either ſide.

Such was the juſtice to whoſe tremendous bar Mr. Gotobed the conſtable, on the day above-mentioned, brought ſeveral delinquents, who, as we have ſaid, had been apprehended by the watch for divers outrages.

The firſt who came upon his trial was as bloody a ſpectre as ever the imagination of a murderer or a tragic poet conceived. This poor wretch was charged with a battery by a much ſtouter man than himſelf; indeed, the accuſed perſon bore about him ſome evidence that he had been in an affray, his cloaths being very bloody: but certain open ſluices on his own head ſufficiently ſhewed whence all the ſcarlet ſtream had iſſued; whereas the accuſer had not the leaſt mark or appearance of any wound. The juſtice aſked the defendant, what he meant by breaking

ing the king's peace? to which he anſwered---'Upon 'my ſhoul, I do love the king very well, and I have 'not been after breaking any thing of his that I do 'know: but upon my ſhoul, this man hath brake 'my head, and my head did brake his ſtick; that is 'all, gra.' He then offered to produce ſeveral witneſſes againſt this improbable accuſation; but the juſtice preſently interrupted him, ſaying, 'Sirrah, 'your tongue betrays your guilt. You are an Iriſh-'man; and that is always ſufficient evidence with 'me.'

The ſecond criminal was a poor woman, who was taken up by the watch as a ſtreet-walker. It was alledged againſt her, that ſhe was found walking the ſtreets after twelve o'clock, and the watchman declared, he believed her to be a common ſtrumpet. She pleaded in her defence, (as was really the truth) that ſhe was a ſervant, and was ſent by her miſtreſs, who was a little ſhop-keeper, and upon the point of delivery, to fetch a midwife; which ſhe offered to prove by ſeveral of the neighbours, if ſhe was allowed to ſend for them. The juſtice aſked her why ſhe had not done it before; to which ſhe anſwered, ſhe had no money, and could get no meſſenger. The juſtice then called her ſeveral ſcurrilous names; and declaring ſhe was guilty, within the ſtatute of ſtreet-walking, ordered her to Bridewell for a month.

A genteel young man and woman were then ſet forward, and a very grave-looking perſon ſwore he caught them in a ſituation which we cannot as particularly deſcribe here, as he did before the magiſtrate; who, having received a wink from his clerk, declared with much warmth that the fact was incredible and impoſſible. He preſently diſcharged the accuſed parties, and was going, without any evidence, to commit the accuſer for perjury; but this the clerk diſſuaded him from, ſaying, he doubted whether a juſtice of peace had any ſuch power. The juſtice at firſt differed in opinion; and ſaid, he had ſeen a man

ſtand

ſtand in the pillory about perjury; nay, he had known a man in gaol for it too; and how came he there, if he was not committed thither? 'Why that is true, 'Sir,' anſwered the clerk; 'and yet I have been told 'by a very great lawyer, that a man cannot be com-'mitted for perjury before he is indicted; and the 'reaſon is, I believe, becauſe it is not againſt the 'peace before the indictment makes it ſo.'---'Why, 'that may be,' cries the juſtice; 'and indeed perjury 'is but ſcandalous words, and I know a man can't 'have no warrant for thoſe, unleſs you put for rioting* 'them into the warrant.'

The witneſs was now about to be diſcharged, when the lady whom he had accuſed declared ſhe would ſwear the peace againſt him; for that he had called her a whore ſeveral times. 'Oho! you will ſwear 'the peace, Madam, will you?' cries the juſtice. 'Give her the peace preſently---and pray, Mr. Con-'ſtable ſecure the priſoner, now we have him, while 'a warrant is made to take him up.' All which was immediately performed; and the poor witneſs, for want of ſureties, was ſent to priſon.

A young fellow, whoſe name was Booth, was now charged with beating the watchman in the execution of his office, and breaking his lantern. This was

* *Opus eſt interprete.* By the laws of England, abuſive words are not puniſhable by the magiſtrate; ſome commiſſioners of the peace, therefore, when one ſcold hath applied to them for a warrant againſt another, from a too eager deſire of doing juſtice, have conſtrued a little harmleſs ſcolding into a riot, which is in law an outrageous breach of the peace, committed by ſeveral perſons, by three at the leaſt; nor can a leſs number be convicted of it. Under this word *rioting* or *riotting* (for I have ſeen it ſpelt both ways) many thouſands of old women have been arreſted and put to expence, ſometimes in priſon, for a little intemperate uſe of their tongues. This practice began to decreaſe in the year 1749.

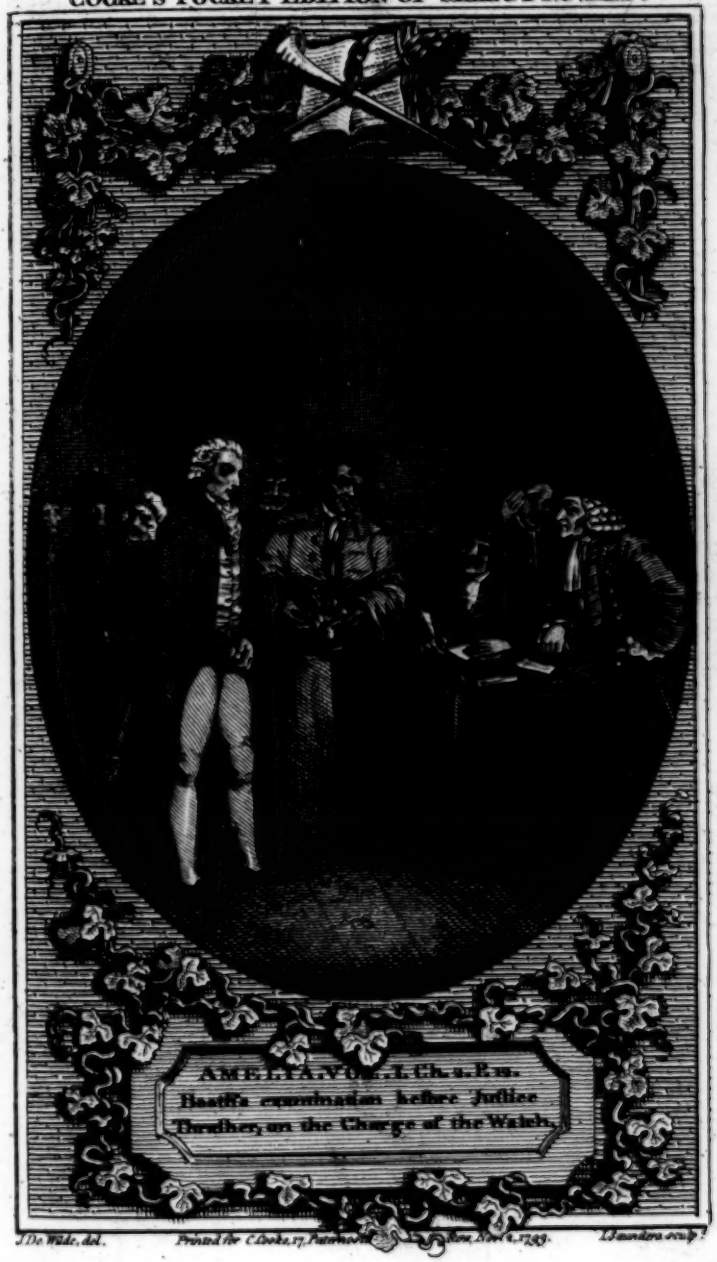
depoſed

depoſed by two witneſſes; and the ſhattered remains of a broken lantern, which had been long preſerved for the ſake of it's teſtimony, were produced to corroborate the evidence. The juſtice, perceiving the criminal to be but ſhabbily dreſſed, was going to commit him without aſking any farther queſtions. At length, however, at the earneſt requeſt of the accuſed, the worthy magiſtrate ſubmitted to hear his defence. The young man then alledged, as was in reality the caſe, that as he was walking home to his lodging, he ſaw two men in the ſtreet cruelly beating a third, upon which he ſtopped and endeavoured to aſſiſt the perſon who was ſo unequally attacked; that the watch came up during the affray, and took them all four into cuſtody; that they were immediately carried to the round-houſe, where the two original aſſailants, who appeared to be men of fortune, found means to make up the matter, and were diſcharged by the conſtable; a favour which he himſelf, having no money in his pocket, was unable to obtain. He utterly denied having aſſaulted any of the watchmen, and ſolemnly declared, that he was offered his liberty at the price of half-a-crown.

Though the bare word of an offender can never be taken againſt the oath of his accuſer; yet the matter of this defence was ſo pertinent, and delivered with ſuch an air of truth and ſincerity, that had the magiſtrate been endued with much ſagacity, or had he been very moderately gifted with another quality, very neceſſary to all who are to adminiſter juſtice, he would have employed ſome labour in croſs-examining the watchmen; at leaſt he would have given the defendant the time he deſired to ſend for the other perſons who were preſent at the affray; neither of which he did. In ſhort, the magiſtrate had too great an honour for Truth to ſuſpect that ſhe ever appeared in ſordid apparel; nor did he ever ſully his ſublime notions of that virtue, by uniting them with the mean ideas of poverty and diſtreſs.

There

COOKE'S POCKET EDITION OF SELECT NOVELS.



J. De Wilde, del. Printed for C. Cooke, 17, Paternoster Row, Nov. 2, 1793. J. Saunders sculp.

2 JY 58

There remained now only one priſoner, and that was the poor man himſelf in whoſe defence the laſt mentioned culprit was engaged. His trial took but a very ſhort time. A cauſe of battery and broken lantern was inſtituted againſt him, and proved in the ſame manner; nor would the juſtice hear one word in defence: but though his patience was exhauſted, his breath was not; for againſt this laſt wretch he poured forth a great many vollies of menaces and abuſe.

The delinquents were then all diſpatched to priſon, under a guard of watchmen; and the juſtice and the conſtable adjourned to a neighbouring ale-houſe, to take their morning repaſt.

CHAP. III.

Containing the inſide of a Priſon.

MR. Booth (for we ſhall not trouble you with the reſt) was no ſooner arrived in the priſon, than a number of perſons gathered round him, all demanding *garniſh*; to which Mr. Booth not making a ready anſwer, as indeed he did not underſtand the word, ſome were going to lay hold of him, when a perſon of apparent dignity came up, and inſiſted that no one ſhould affront the gentleman. This perſon then, who was no leſs than the maſter or keeper of the priſon, turning towards Mr. Booth, acquainted him that it was the cuſtom of the place for every priſoner, upon his firſt arrival there, to give ſomething to the former priſoners to make them drink. This, he ſaid, was what they called garniſh; and concluded with adviſing his new cuſtomer to draw his purſe upon the preſent occaſion. Mr. Booth anſwered, that he would very readily comply with this laudable cuſtom, was it in his power, but that in reality he had not a ſhilling in his pocket; and what was worſe, he had not a ſhilling in the world. 'Oho! if that be the caſe,' cries the keeper, 'it is another matter, and I have nothing to 'ſay.' Upon which he immediately departed, and left poor Booth to the mercy of his companions; who, without loſs of time, applied themſelves to *uncaſing*,

as they termed it, and with ſuch dexterity, that his coat was not only ſtripped off, but out of ſight in a minute.

Mr. Booth was too weak to reſiſt, and too wiſe to complain of this uſage. As ſoon, therefore, as he was at liberty, and declared free of the place, he ſummoned his philoſophy, of which he had no inconſiderable ſhare, to his aſſiſtance, and reſolved to make himſelf as eaſy as poſſible under his preſent circumſtances.

Could his own thoughts indeed have ſuffered him a moment to forget where he was, the diſpoſitions of the other priſoners might have induced him to believe that he had been in a happier place; for much the greater part of his fellow-ſufferers, inſtead of wailing and repining at their condition, were laughing, ſinging, and diverting themſelves with various kinds of ſports and gambols.

The firſt perſon who accoſted him was called Bleareyed Moll; a woman of no very comely appearance. Her eye (for ſhe had but one) whence ſhe derived her nick-name, was ſuch as that nick name beſpoke: beſides which, it had two remarkable qualities; for firſt, as if Nature had been careful to provide for her own defect, it conſtantly looked towards her blind ſide; and, ſecondly, the ball conſiſted almoſt entirely of white, or rather yellow, with a little grey ſpot in the corner, ſo ſmall, that it was ſcarce diſcernible. Noſe ſhe had none; for Venus, envious perhaps at her former charms, had carried off the griſtly part; and ſome earthly damſel, perhaps from the ſame envy, had levelled the bone with the reſt of her face: indeed it was far beneath the bones of her cheeks, which roſe proportionably higher than is uſual. About half a dozen ebony teeth fortified that large and long canal which Nature had cut from ear to ear, at the bottom of which was a chin, prepoſterouſly ſhort, Nature having turned up the bottom inſtead of ſuffering it to grow to it's due length.

Her

Her body was well adapted to her face; ſhe meaſured full as much round the middle as from head to foot; for beſides the extreme breadth of her back, her vaſt breaſts had long ſince forſaken their native home, and had ſettled themſelves a little below the girdle.

I wiſh certain actreſſes on the ſtage, when they are to perform characters of no amiable caſt, would ſtudy to dreſs themſelves with the propriety with which Blear-eyed Moll was now arrayed. For the ſake of our ſqueamiſh reader, we ſhall not deſcend to particulars. Let it ſuffice to ſay, nothing more ragged, or more dirty, was ever emptied out of the round-houſe at St. Giles's.

We have taken the more pains to deſcribe this perſon, for two remarkable reaſons: the one is, that this unlovely creature was taken in the fact with a very pretty young fellow; the other, which is more productive of moral leſſon, is, that however wretched her fortune may appear to the reader, ſhe was one of the merrieſt perſons in the whole priſon.

Blear-eyed Moll then came up to Mr. Booth, with a ſmile, or rather grin on her countenance, and aſked him for a dram of gin; and when Booth aſſured her that he not a penny of money, ſhe replied---'D---n 'your eyes, I thought by your look you had been a 'clever fellow, and upon the ſnaffling lay* at leaſt; 'but, d---n your body and eyes, I find you are ſome 'ſneaking budge raſcal †.' She then launched forth a volley of dreadful oaths, interlarded with language not proper to be repeated here; and was going to lay hold on poor Booth, when a tall priſoner, who had been very earneſtly eyeing Booth for ſome time, came up, and taking her by the ſhoulder, flung her off at ſome diſtance, curſing her for a b---h, and bidding her let the gentleman alone.

This perſon was not himſelf of the moſt inviting aſpect. He was long-viſaged, and pale, with a red

* A cant term for robbery on the highway.

† Another cant term for pilfering.

beard of above a fortnight's growth. He was attired in a browniſh black coat, which would have ſhewed more holes than it did, had not the linen which appeared through it been entirely of the ſame colour with the cloth.

This gentleman, whoſe name was Robinſon, addreſſed himſelf very civilly to Mr. Booth, and told him he was ſorry to ſee one of his appearance in that place: 'For as to your being without your coat, 'Sir,' ſays he, 'I can eaſily account for that; and 'indeed dreſs is the leaſt part which diſtinguiſhes a 'gentleman.' At which words, he caſt a ſignificant look at his own coat, as if he deſired they ſhould be applied to himſelf. He then proceeded in the following manner.

'I perceive, Sir, you are but juſt arrived in this 'diſmal place, which is indeed rendered more deteſta-'ble by the wretches who inhabit it, than by any 'other circumſtance; but even theſe a wiſe man will 'ſoon bring himſelf to bear with indifference: for 'what is, is; and what muſt be, muſt be. The 'knowledge of this, which, ſimple as it appears, is 'in truth the height of all philoſophy, renders a 'wiſe man ſuperior to every evil which can befal him. 'I hope, Sir, no very dreadful accident is the cauſe 'of your coming hither; but whatever it was, you 'may be aſſured it could not be otherwiſe: for all 'things happen by an inevitable fatality; and a man 'can no more reſiſt the impulſe of Fate, than a 'wheelbarrow can the force of it's driver.'

Beſides the obligation which Mr. Robinſon had conferred on Mr. Booth, in delivering him from the inſults of Blear-eyed Moll, there was ſomething in the manner of Robinſon, which, notwithſtanding the meanneſs of his dreſs, ſeemed to diſtinguiſh him from the crowd of wretches who ſwarmed in thoſe regions; and above all, the ſentiments which he had juſt declared very nearly coincided with thoſe of Mr. Booth. This gentleman was what they call a free-thinker;

that

that is to ſay, a deiſt; or, perhaps, an atheiſt: for though he did not abſolutely deny the exiſtence of a God, yet he entirely denied his providence. A doctrine which, if it is not downright atheiſm, hath a direct tendency towards it; and, as Dr. Clarke obſerves, may be ſoon driven into it. And as to Mr. Booth, though he was in his heart an extreme well-wiſher to religion, (for he was an honeſt man) yet his notions of it were very ſlight and uncertain. To ſay truth, he was in the wavering condition ſo finely deſcribed by Claudian---

labefacta cadebat
Religio, cauſæque viam non ſponte *ſequebar*
Alterius; vacuo quæ currere ſemina motu
Affirmat; magnumque novas per inane figuras
Fortuna, non arte, regi; quæ numina ſenſu
Ambiguo, vel nulla putat, vel neſcia noſtri.

This way of thinking, or rather of doubting, he had contracted from the ſame reaſons which Claudian aſſigns, and which had induced Brutus, in his latter days, to doubt the exiſtence of that virtue which he had all his life cultivated. In ſhort, poor Booth imagined, that a larger ſhare of misfortunes had fallen to his lot than he had merited; and this led him, who (though a good claſſical ſcholar) was not deeply learned in religious matters, into a diſadvantageous opinion of Providence. A dangerous way of reaſoning, in which our concluſions are not only too haſty, from an imperfect view of things; but we are likewiſe liable to much error from partiality to ourſelves; viewing our virtues and vices as through a perſpective, in which we turn the glaſs always to our own advantage, ſo as to diminiſh the one, and as greatly to magnify the other.

From the above reaſons, it can be no wonder that Mr. Booth did not decline the acquaintance of this perſon, in a place which could not promiſe to afford him any better. He anſwered him, therefore, with great courteſy, as indeed he was of a very good and

gentle diſpoſition; and, after expreſſing a civil ſurprize at meeting him there, declared himſelf to be of the ſame opinion with regard to the neceſſity of human actions; adding, however, that he did not believe men were under any blind impulſe or direction of Fate; but that every man acted merely from the force of that paſſion which was uppermoſt in his mind, and could do no otherwiſe.

A diſcourſe now enſued between the two gentlemen on the neceſſity ariſing from the impulſe of Fate, and the neceſſity ariſing from the impulſe of Paſſion; which, as it will make a pretty pamphlet of itſelf, we ſhall reſerve for ſome future opportunity. When this was ended, they ſet forward to ſurvey the gaol, and the priſoners; with the ſeveral caſes of whom Mr. Robinſon, having been ſome time under confinement, undertook to make Mr. Booth acquainted.

CHAP. IV.

Diſcloſing farther Secrets of the Priſon-Houſe.

THE firſt perſons whom they paſſed by were three men in fetters, who were enjoying themſelves very merrily over a bottle of wine and a pipe of tobacco. Theſe, Mr. Robinſon informed his friend, were three ſtreet-robbers, and were all certain of being hanged at the enſuing ſeſſions. 'So inconſiderable 'an object,' ſaid he, 'is miſery to light minds, when 'it is at any diſtance.'

A little farther they beheld a man proſtrate on the ground, whoſe heavy groans, and frantic actions, plainly indicated the higheſt diſorder of mind. This perſon was, it ſeems, committed for a ſmall felony; and his wife, who then lay in, upon hearing the news, had thrown herſelf from a window two pair of ſtairs high, by which means he had, in all probability, loſt both her and his child.

A very pretty girl then advanced towards them, whoſe beauty Mr. Booth could not help admiring the moment he ſaw her; declaring at the ſame time, he thought ſhe had great innocence in her countenance.

Robinſon

Robinſon ſaid ſhe was committed thither as an idle and diſorderly perſon, and a common ſtreet-walker. As ſhe paſſed by Mr. Booth, ſhe damned his eyes, and diſcharged a volley of words, every one of which was too indecent to be repeated.

They now beheld a little creature ſitting by herſelf in a corner, and crying bitterly. This girl, Mr. Robinſon ſaid, was committed, becauſe her father-in-law, who was in the grenadier-guards, had ſworn that he was afraid of his life, or of ſome bodily harm which ſhe would do him, and ſhe could get no ſureties for keeping the peace: for which reaſon Juſtice Thraſher had committed her to priſon.

A great noiſe now aroſe, occaſioned by the priſoners all flocking to ſee a fellow whipped for petty larceny, to which he was condemned by the court of quarter ſeſſions: but this ſoon ended in the diſappointment of the ſpectators; for the fellow, after being ſtripped, having advanced another ſixpence, was diſcharged untouched.

This was immediately followed by another buſtle. Blear-eyed Moll, and ſeveral of her companions, having got poſſeſſion of a man who was committed for certain odious, unmanlike practices, not fit to be named, were giving him various kinds of diſcipline, and would probably have put an end to him, had he not been reſcued out of their hands by authority.

When this buſtle was a little allayed, Mr. Booth took notice of a young woman in rags ſitting on the ground, and ſupporting the head of an old man in her lap, who appeared to be giving up the ghoſt. Theſe, Mr. Robinſon informed him, were father and daughter; that the latter was committed for ſtealing a loaf, in order to ſupport the former; and the former for receiving it, knowing it to be ſtolen.

A well-dreſſed man then walked ſurlily by them, whom Mr. Robinſon reported to have been committed on an indictment found againſt him for a moſt horrid perjury. 'But,' ſays he, 'we expect him to be

'bailed

'bailed to-day.'---'Good Heaven!' cries Booth 'can ſuch villains find bail, and is no perſon charitable enough to bail that poor father and daughter?' ---'O Sir!' anſwered Robinſon, 'the offence of the 'daughter being felony, is held not to be bailable in 'law; whereas perjury is a miſdemeanour only; 'and therefore, perſons who are even indicted for it, 'are nevertheleſs capable of being bailed. Nay, of 'all perjuries, that of which this man is indicted is 'the worſt; for it was with an intention of taking 'away the life of an innocent perſon by form of law. 'As to perjuries in civil matters, they are not ſo very 'criminal.'---'They are not,' ſaid Booth; 'and yet 'even theſe are a moſt flagitious offence, and worthy 'the higheſt puniſhment.'---'Surely they ought to 'be diſtinguiſhed,' anſwered Robinſon, 'from the 'others: for what is taking away a little property 'from a man, compared to taking away his life and 'his reputation, and ruining his family into the bargain? I hope there can be no compariſon in the 'crimes, and I think there ought to be none in the 'puniſhment. However, at preſent, the puniſhment 'of all perjury is only pillory, and tranſportation for 'ſeven years; and, as it is a traverſable and bailable 'offence, methods are often found to eſcape any puniſhment at all*."

Booth expreſſed great aſtoniſhment at this, when his attention was ſuddenly diverted by the moſt miſerable object that he had yet ſeen. This was a wretch almoſt naked, and who bore in his countenance, joined to an appearance of honeſty, the marks of poverty, hunger, and diſeaſe. He had, moreover, a wooden leg, and two or three ſcars on his forehead. 'The caſe of this poor man is, indeed, unhappy

* By removing the indictment by certiorari into the King's Bench, the trial is ſo long poſtponed, and the coſts are ſo highly increaſed, that proſecutors are often tired out, and ſome incapacitated from purſuing. *Verbum ſapient.*

'enough,'

'enough,' ſaid Robinſon: 'he hath ſerved his coun-
'try, loſt his limb, and received ſeveral wounds at
'the ſiege of Gibraltar. When he was diſcharged
'from the hoſpital abroad, he came over to get into
'that of Chelſea, but could not immediately, as
'none of his officers were then in England. In the
'mean time he was one day apprehended and com-
'mitted hither on ſuſpicion of ſtealing three herrings
'from a fiſhmonger. He was tried ſeveral months
'ago for this offence, and acquitted: indeed his in-
'nocence manifeſtly appeared at the trial; but he was
'brought back again for his fees, and here he hath
'lain ever ſince.'

Booth expreſſed great horror at this account, and declared, if he had only ſo much money in his pocket, he would pay his fees for him; but added, that he was not poſſeſſed of a ſingle farthing in the world.

Robinſon heſitated a moment, and then ſaid with a ſmile---'I am going to make you, Sir, a very odd
'propoſal after your laſt declaration; but what ſay
'you to a game at cards? it will ſerve to paſs a
'tedious hour, and may divert your thoughts from
'more unpleaſant ſpeculations.'

I do not imagine Booth would have agreed to this: for though ſome love of gaming had been formerly amongſt his faults, yet he was not ſo egregiouſly addicted to that vice, as to be tempted by the ſhabby plight of Robinſon, who had, if I may ſo expreſs myſelf, no charms for a gameſter. If he had, however, any ſuch inclinations, he had no opportunity to follow them; for, before he could make any anſwer to Robinſon's propoſal, a ſtrapping wench came up to Booth, and taking hold of his arm, aſked him to walk aſide with her, ſaying---'What a pox! are you ſuch
'a freſh cull, that you do not know this fellow?
'Why, he is a gambler, and committed for cheating
'at play. There is not ſuch a pick-pocket in the
'whole *quad**.

* A cant word for a priſon.

A ſcene

A ſcene of altercation now enſued between Robinſon and the lady, which ended in a bout at fiſtcuffs, in which the lady was greatly ſuperior to the philoſopher.

While the two combatants were engaged, a grave-looking man, rather better dreſſed than the majority of the company, came up to Mr. Booth, and taking him aſide, ſaid---'I am ſorry, Sir, to ſee a gentleman, 'as you appear to be, in ſuch intimacy with that 'raſcal, who makes no ſcruple of diſowning all re-'vealed religion. As for crimes, they are human 'errors, and ſignify but little; nay, perhaps, the 'worſe a man is by nature, the more room there is 'for grace. The Spirit is active, and loves beſt to 'inhabit thoſe minds where it may meet with the 'moſt work. Whatever your crime be, therefore, 'I would not have you deſpair, but rather rejoice at 'it; for, perhaps, it may be the means of your being 'called.' He ran on for a conſiderable time with this cant, without waiting for an anſwer, and ended in declaring himſelf a methodiſt.

Juſt as the methodiſt had finiſhed his diſcourſe, a beautiful young woman was uſhered into the gaol. She was genteel and well-dreſſed, and did not in the leaſt reſemble thoſe females whom Mr. Booth had hitherto ſeen. The conſtable had no ſooner delivered her at the gate, than ſhe aſked, with a commanding voice, for the keeper; and, when he arrived, ſhe ſaid to him---'Well, Sir, whither am I to be conducted? 'I hope I am not to take up my lodging with theſe 'creatures!' The keeper anſwered, with a kind of 'ſurly reſpect---'Madam, we have rooms for thoſe 'that can afford to pay for them.' At theſe words ſhe took a handſome purſe from her pocket, in which many guineas chinked, ſaying, with an air of indignation, that ſhe was not come thither on account of poverty. The keeper no ſooner viewed the purſe, than his features became all ſoftened in an inſtant; and, with all the courteſy of which he was maſter,

deſired

desired the lady to walk with him, assuring her that she should have the best apartment in his house.

Mr. Booth was now left alone; for the methodist had forsaken him, having, as the phrase of the sect is, *searched* him to the bottom. In fact, he had thoroughly examined every one of Mr. Booth's pockets; from which he had conveyed away a pen-knife, and an iron snuff-box, these being all the moveables which were to be found.

Booth was standing near the gate of the prison, when the young lady above-mentioned was introduced into the yard. He viewed her features very attentively, and was persuaded that he knew her. She was, indeed, so remarkably handsome, that it was hardly possible for any one who had ever seen her to forget her. He enquired of one of the under-keepers, if the name of the prisoner lately arrived was not Matthews; to which he was answered, that her name was not Matthews, but Vincent, and that she was committed for murder.

The latter part of this information made Mr. Booth suspect his memory more than the former: for it was very possible that she might have changed her name; but yet he hardly thought she could have so far changed her nature, as to be guilty of a crime so very incongruous with her former gentle manners; for Miss Matthews had both the birth and education of a gentlewoman. He concluded, therefore, that he was certainly mistaken, and rested satisfied without any farther enquiry.

CHAP. V.

Containing certain Adventures which befel Mr. Booth in the Prison.

THE remainder of the day Mr. Booth spent in a melancholy contemplation on his present condition. He was destitute of the common necessaries of life, and consequently unable to subsist where he was; nor was there a single person in town to whom he could, with any reasonable hope, apply for his delivery.

livery. Grief for ſome time baniſhed the thoughts of food from his mind; but in the morning, Nature began to grow uneaſy for want of her uſual nouriſhment; for he had not eat a morſel during the laſt forty hours. A penny loaf, which is, it ſeems, the ordinary allowance to the priſoners in Bridewell, was now delivered him; and, while he was eating this, a man brought him a little packet ſealed up, informing him that it came by a meſſenger who ſaid it required no anſwer.

Mr. Booth now opened his packet; and, after unfolding ſeveral pieces of blank paper ſucceſſively, at laſt diſcovered a guinea, wrapped with great care in the innermoſt paper. He was vaſtly ſurpriſed at this ſight, as he had few, if any friends, from whom he could expect ſuch a favour, ſlight as it was; and not one of his friends, as he was apprized, knew of his confinement. As there was no direction to the packet, nor a word of writing contained in it, he began to ſuſpect that it was delivered to the wrong perſon; and being one of the moſt untainted honeſty, he found out the man who gave it to him, and again examined him concerning the perſon who brought it, and the meſſage delivered with it. The man aſſured Booth, that he had made no miſtake, ſaying---'If your name is 'Booth, Sir, I am poſitive you are the gentleman to 'whom the parcel I gave you belongs.'

The moſt ſcrupulous honeſty would, perhaps, in ſuch a ſituation, have been well enough ſatisfied in finding no owner for the guinea; eſpecially when proclamations had been made in the priſon, that Mr. Booth had received a packet without any direction, to which, if any perſon had any claim, and would diſcover the contents, he was ready to deliver it up to ſuch claimant. No ſuch claimant being found, (I mean, none who knew the contents; for many ſwore that they expected juſt ſuch a packet, and believed it to be their property) Mr. Booth very calmly reſolved to apply the money to his own uſe.

The

The first thing, after redemption of the coat, which Mr. Booth, hungry as he was, thought of, was to supply himself with snuff, which he had long, to his great sorrow, been without. On this occasion, he presently missed that iron box which the methodist had so dexterously conveyed out of his pocket, as we mentioned in the last chapter.

He no sooner missed this box, than he immediately suspected that the gambler was the person who had stolen it; nay, so well was he assured of this man's guilt, that it may, perhaps, be improper to say he barely suspected it. Though Mr. Booth was, as we have hinted, a man of a very sweet disposition, yet was he rather over-warm. Having, therefore, no doubt concerning the person of the thief, he eagerly sought him out, and very bluntly charged him with the fact.

The gambler, whom I think we should now call the philosopher, received this charge without the least visible emotion, either of mind or muscle. After a short pause of a few moments, he answered, with great solemnity, as follows---'Young man, I am 'entirely unconcerned at your groundless suspicion. 'He that censures a stranger, as I am to you, with-'out any cause, makes a worse compliment to him-'self than to the stranger. You know yourself, 'friend; you know not me. It is true, indeed, you 'heard me accused of being a cheat and a gamester; 'but who is my accuser? Look at my apparel, friend; 'do thieves and gamesters wear such clothes as these? 'Play is my folly, not my vice; it is my impulse, and 'I have been a martyr to it. Would a gamester have 'asked another to play, when he could have lost 'eighteen-pence, and won nothing? However, if you 'are not satisfied, you may search my pockets: the 'outside of all but one will serve your turn, and in 'that one there is the eighteen-pence I told you of.' He then turned up his cloaths, and his pocket entirely resembled the pitchers of the Belides.

Booth was a little ſtaggered at his defence. He ſaid, the real value of the iron box was too inconſiderable to mention; but that he had a capricious value for it, for the ſake of the perſon who gave it him: 'For though it is not,' ſaid he, 'worth ſix-pence, I 'would willingly give a crown to any one who would bring it me again.' Robinſon anſwered---'If that be 'the caſe, you have nothing more to do but to ſignify 'your intention in the priſon, and I am well convin-'ced you will not be long without regaining the poſ-'ſeſſion of your ſnuff-box.'

This advice was immediately followed, and with ſucceſs: the methodiſt preſently produced the box; which, he ſaid, he had found, and ſhould have returned before, had he known the perſon to whom it belonged; adding, with uplifted eyes, that the Spirit would not ſuffer him knowingly to detain the goods of another, however inconſiderable the value was. 'Why ſo, friend;' ſaid Robinſon: 'have I not heard 'you often ſay, the more wicked any man was, the bet-'ter; provided he was what you call a believer?'---'You miſtake me,' cries Cooper, (for that was the name of the methodiſt;) 'no man can be wicked after 'he is poſſeſſed by the Spirit. 'There is a wide dif-'ference between the days of ſin, and the days of 'grace. I have been a ſinner myſelf.'---'I believe 'thee, cries Robinſon, with a ſneer. 'I care not,' anſwered the other, 'what an atheiſt believes. I 'ſuppoſe you would inſinuate, that I ſtole the ſnuff-'box; but I value not your malice: the Lord knows 'my innocence.' He then walked off with the reward; and Booth, turning to Robinſon, very earneſtly aſked pardon for his groundleſs ſuſpicion; which the other, without any heſitatation, accorded him, ſaying,---'You never accuſed me, Sir; you ſuſpected ſome 'gambler, with whoſe character I have no concern. 'I ſhould be angry with a friend or acquaintance who 'ſhould give a haſty credit to any allegation againſt 'me; but I have no reaſon to be offended with you.

'for

'for believing what the woman, and the raſcal who is 'juſt gone, and who is committed here for a pick-'pocket, which you did not perhaps know, told you 'to my diſadvantage. And if you thought me to be 'a gambler, you had juſt reaſon to ſuſpect any ill of 'me: for I myſelf am confined here by the perjury of 'one of thoſe villains; who, having cheated me of my 'money at play, and hearing that I intended to apply 'to a magiſtrate againſt him, himſelf began the at-'tack, and obtained a warrant againſt me of Juſtice 'Thraſher, who, without hearing one ſpeech in my 'defence, committed me to this place.'

Booth teſtified great compaſſion at this account; and having invited Robinſon to dinner, they ſpent that day together. In the afternoon Booth indulged his friend with a game at cards; at firſt for halfpence and afterwards for ſhillings; when Fortune ſo favoured Robinſon, that he did not leave the other a ſingle ſhilling in his pocket.

A ſurpriſing run of luck in a gameſter is often miſtaken for ſomewhat elſe, by perſons who are not over zealous believers in the divinity of Fortune. I have known a ſtranger at Bath, who had happened fortunately (I might almoſt ſay unfortunately) to have four by honours in his hand almoſt every time he dealt, for a whole evening, ſhunned univerſally by the whole company the next day. And certain it is, that Mr. Booth, though of a temper very little inclined to ſuſpicion, began to waver in his opinion, whether the character given by Mr. Robinſon of himſelf, or that which the others gave of him, was the truer.

In the morning, hunger paid him a ſecond viſit, and found him again in the ſame ſituation as before. After ſome deliberation, therefore, he reſolved to aſk Robinſon to lend him a ſhilling or two of that money which was lately his own. And this experiment he thought, would confirm him either in a good or evil opinion of that gentleman. To this demand Robinſon anſwered, with great alacrity, that he ſhould very

gladly have complied, had not Fortune played one of her jade tricks with him: 'For since my winning of 'you,' said he, 'I have been stripped not only of your 'money, but my own.' He was going to harangue farther, but Booth, with great indignation, turned from him.

This poor gentleman had very little time to reflect on his own misery, or the rascality, as it appeared to him, of the other, when the same person, who had the day before delivered him the guinea from the unknown hand, again accosted him, and told him a lady in the house (so he expressed himself) desired the favour of his company.

Mr. Booth immediately obeyed the message, and was conducted into a room in the prison, where he was presently convinced that Mrs. Vincent was no other than his old acquaintance Miss Mathews.

CHAP. VI.

Containing the extraordinary Behaviour of Miss Matthews on her meeting with Booth, and some Endeavours to prove by Reason and Authority, that it is possible for a Woman to appear to be what she really is not.

EIGHT or nine years had passed since any interview between Mr. Booth and Miss Matthews; and their meeting now in so extraordinary a place affected both of them with an equal surprize.

After some immaterial ceremonies, the lady acquainted Mr. Booth, that having heard there was a person in the prison, who knew her by the name of Matthews, she had a great curiosity to enquire who he was; whereupon he had been shewn to her from the window of the house; that she immediately recollected him, and being informed of his distressful situation, for which she expressed great concern, she had sent him that guinea which he had received the day before; and then proceeded to excuse herself for not having desired to see him at that time, when she was under the greatest disorder and hurry of spirits.

Booth made many handsome acknowledgments of her

her favour: and added, that he very little wondered at the diſorder of her ſpirits; concluding, that he was heartily concerned at ſeeing her there. 'But I hope, Madam,' ſaid he------

Here he heſitated; upon which, burſting into an agony of tears, ſhe cried out---'O captain, captain! 'many extraordinary things have paſſed ſince I laſt 'ſaw you! O, gracious Heaven! did I ever expect 'that this would be the next place of our meeting!'

She then flung herſelf into her chair, where ſhe gave a looſe to her paſſion; whilſt he in the moſt affectionate and tender manner, endeavoured to ſoothe and comfort her; but paſſion itſelf did, probably, more for it's own relief, than all his friendly conſolations. Having vented this in a large flood of tears, ſhe became pretty well compoſed; but Booth unhappily mentioning her father, ſhe again relapſed into an agony, and cried---'Why, why will you repeat the name of that 'dear man! I have diſgraced him, Mr. Booth! I am 'unworthy the name of his daughter!' Here paſſion again ſtopped her words, and diſcharged itſelf in tears.

After this ſecond vent of ſorrow or ſhame; or if the reader pleaſes, of rage; ſhe once more recovered from her agonies. To ſay the truth, theſe are, I believe, as critical diſcharges of nature, as any of thoſe which are ſo called by the phyſicians; and do more effectually relieve the mind than any remedies with which the whole *materia medica* of philoſophy can ſupply it.

When Mrs. Vincent had recovered her faculties, ſhe perceived Booth ſtanding ſilent, with a mixture of concern and aſtoniſhment in his countenance; then addreſſing herſelf to him with an air of the moſt bewitching ſoftneſs, of which ſhe was perfect miſtreſs, ſhe ſaid---'I do not wonder at your amazement, Cap-'tain Booth; nor, indeed, at the concern which you 'ſo plainly diſcover for me, for I well know the good-'neſs of your nature: but, O Mr. Booth! believe me, 'when you know what hath happened ſince our laſt 'meeting, your concern will be raiſed, however your

'aſtoniſhment may ceaſe. O, Sir! you are a ſtranger 'to the cauſe of my ſorrows.'

'I hope I am, Madam,' anſwered he; 'for I 'cannot believe what I have heard in the priſon: ſure-'ly, murder---' At which words ſhe ſtarted from her chair, repeating---'Murder! O, it is muſic in my 'ears! You have heard then the cauſe of my com-'mitment, my glory, my delight, my reparation! 'Yes, my old friend, this is the hand, this is the arm 'that drove the penknife to his heart. Unkind For-'tune, that not one drop of his blood reached my 'hand! indeed, Sir, I would never have waſhed it 'from it. But though I have not the happineſs to ſee 'it on my hand, I have the glorious ſatisfaction of re-'membering I ſaw it run in rivers on the floor; I ſaw 'it forſake his cheeks; I ſaw him fall a martyr to my 'revenge. And is the killing a villain to be called 'murder? Perhaps the law calls it ſo. Let it call it 'what it will, or puniſh me as it pleaſes. Puniſh me! '---no, no---that is not in the power of man---not of 'that monſter, man, Mr. Booth. I am undone, am 'revenged, and have now no more buſineſs for life: 'let them take it from me when they will.'

Our poor gentleman turned pale with horror at this ſpeech, and the ejaculation of---'Good Heavens, 'what do I hear!' burſt ſpontaneouſly from his lips: nor can we wonder at this, though he was the braveſt of men; for her voice, her looks, her geſtures, were properly adapted to the ſentiments ſhe expreſſed. Such, indeed, was her image, that neither could Shakeſpeare deſcribe, nor Hogarth paint, nor Clive act, a Fury, in higher perfection.

'What do you hear!' reiterated ſhe. 'You hear 'the reſentment of the moſt injured of women. You 'have heard, you ſay, of the murder; but do you 'know the cauſe, Mr. Booth? Have you, ſince 'your return to England, viſited that country where 'we formerly knew one another? Tell me, do you 'know my wretched ſtory? tell me that, my friend.'

Booth

Booth hesitated for an answer. Indeed, he had heard some imperfect stories, not much to her advantage. She waited not till he had formed a speech, but cried---'Whatever you may have heard, you cannot 'be acquainted with all the strange accidents which 'have occasioned your seeing me in a place which, 'at our last parting, was so unlikely that I should ever 'have been found in; nor can you know the cause of 'all that I have uttered, and which, I am convinced, 'you never expected to have heard from my mouth. If 'these circumstances raise your curiosity, I will satis-'fy it.'

He answered, that curiosity was too mean a word to express his ardent desire of knowing her story. Upon which, with very little previous ceremony, she began to relate what is written in the following chapter.

But before we put an end to this, it may be necessary to whisper a word or two to the critics, who have, perhaps, begun to express no less astonishment than Mr. Booth, that a lady, in whom we had remarked a most extraordinary power of displaying softness, should, the very next moment after the words were out of her mouth, express sentiments becoming the lips of a Dalilah, Jezebel, Medea, Semiramis, Parysatis, Tanaquil, Livilla, Messalina, Agrippina, Brunichilde, Elfrida, Lady Macbeth, Joan of Naples, Christiana of Sweden, Katherine Hays, Sarah Malcolm, Con. Philips*, or any other heroine of the tender sex, which history, sacred or prophane, ancient or modern, false or true, hath recorded.

We desire such critics to remember, that it is the same English climate, in which, on the lovely 10th of June, under a serene sky, the amorous Jacobite kissing the odoriferous zephyr's breath, gathers a nosegay of white roses to deck the whiter breast of Celia; and in which, on the 11th of June, the very next day,

* Though last, not least.

the

the boiſterous Boreas, rouzed by the hollow thunder, ruſhes horrible through the air, and driving the wet tempeſt before him, levels the hope of the huſbandman with the earth; dreadful remembrance of the conſequences of the Revolution!

Again, let it be remembered, that it is the ſelf-ſame Celia, all tender, ſoft, and delicate; who with a voice, the ſweetneſs of which the ſyrens might envy, warbles the harmonious ſong in praiſe of the Young Adventurer: and again, the next day, or perhaps the next hour, with fiery eyes, wrinkled brows, and foaming lips, roars forth treaſon and nonſenſe in a political argument with ſome fair-one of a different principle.

Or, if the critic be a whig, and conſequently diſlikes ſuch kind of ſimilies, as being too favourable to jacobitiſm, let him be contented with the following ſtory---

I happened, in my youth, to ſit behind two ladies, in a ſide-box at a play, where, in the balcony on the oppoſite ſide, was placed the inimitable B------y C------s, in company with a young fellow of no very formal, or indeed ſober, appearance. One of the ladies, I remember, ſaid to the other---'Did you ever 'ſee any thing look ſo modeſt and ſo innocent as that 'girl over the way? What a pity it is ſuch a creature 'ſhould be in the way of ruin, as I am afraid ſhe is, 'by her being alone with that young fellow!' Now this lady was no bad phyſiognomiſt; for it was impoſſible to conceive a greater appearance of modeſty, innocence, and ſimplicity, than what Nature had diſplayed in the countenance of that girl; and yet, all appearances notwithſtanding, I myſelf (remember, critic, it was in my youth) had a few mornings before ſeen that very identical picture of all thoſe engaging qualities, in bed with a rake at a bagnio, ſmoaking tobacco, drinking punch, talking obſcenity, and ſwearing and curſing with all the impudence and impiety of the loweſt and moſt abandoned trull of a ſoldier.

CHAP.

CHAP. VII.

In which Miſs Matthews begins her Hiſtory.

MISS Matthews having barred the door on the inſide, as ſecurely as it was before barred on the outſide, proceeded as follows---

'You may imagine I am going to begin my hiſtory 'at the time when you left the country; but I cannot 'help reminding you of ſomething which happened 'before. You will ſoon recollect the incident; but, 'I believe, you little knew the conſequence, either at 'that time, or ſince. Alas! I could keep a ſecret 'then: now I have no ſecrets; the world knows all, 'and it is not worth my while to conceal any thing. 'Well! you will not wonder, I believe. I proteſt I 'can hardly tell it you, even now. But I am con-'vinced you have too good an opinion of yourſelf to 'be ſurprized at any conqueſt you have made. Few 'men want that good opinion, and perhaps very few 'had ever more reaſon for it. Indeed, Will, you was 'a charming fellow in thoſe days; nay, you are not 'much altered for the worſe now, at leaſt in the opi-'nion of ſome women; for your complexion and fea-'tures are grown much more maſculine than they were.' Here Booth made her a low bow, moſt probably with a compliment; and, after a little heſitation, ſhe again proceeded---'Do you remember a conteſt which hap-'pened at an aſſembly betwixt myſelf and Miſs John-'ſon, about ſtanding uppermoſt? You was then my 'partner; and young Williams danced with the other 'lady. The particulars are not now worth mention-'ing, though I ſuppoſe you have long ſince forgot 'them. Let it ſuffice, that you ſupported my claim; 'and Williams very ſneakingly gave up that of his 'partner, who was, with much difficulty, afterwards 'prevailed on to dance with him. You ſaid, (I am 'ſure I repeat the words exactly) that you would not, 'for the world, affront any lady there; but that you 'thought you might, without any ſuch danger, de-'clare, that there was no aſſembly in which that lady,

'meaning

'meaning your humble ſervant, was not worthy of the 'uppermoſt place: "nor will I," ſaid you, "ſuffer "the firſt duke in England, when ſhe is at the upper-"moſt end of the room, and hath called her dance, to "lead his partner above her."

'What made this the more pleaſing to me was, 'that I ſecretly hated Miſs Johnſon. Will you have 'the reaſon? Why then, I will tell you honeſtly, ſhe 'was my rival: that word, perhaps, aſtoniſhes you, 'as you never, I believe, heard of any one who made 'his addreſſes to me; and, indeed, my heart was, till 'that night, entirely indifferent to all mankind. I 'mean, then, that ſhe was my rival for praiſe, for 'beauty, for dreſs, for fortune, and conſequently, 'for admiration. My triumph on this conqueſt is not 'to be expreſſed, any more than my delight in the 'perſon to whom I chiefly owed it. The former, I 'fancy, was viſible to the whole company, and I de-'ſired it ſhould be ſo; but the latter was ſo well con-'cealed, that no one, I am confident, took any notice 'of it. And yet you appeared to me that night to 'be an angel. You looked, you danced, you ſpoke '---every thing charmed me.'

'Good Heavens!' cries Booth, 'is it poſſible 'you ſhould do me ſo much unmerited honour, and I 'ſhould be dunce enough not to perceive the leaſt 'ſymptom?'

'I aſſure you,' anſwered ſhe, 'I did all I could to 'prevent you; and yet I almoſt hated you for not ſee-'ing through what I ſtrove to hide. Why, Mr. 'Booth, was you not more quick-ſighted? I will 'anſwer for you; your affections were more happily 'diſpoſed of to a much better woman than myſelf, 'whom you married ſoon afterwards. I ſhould aſk 'you for her, Mr. Booth; I ſhould have aſked you 'for her before: but I am unworthy of aſking for her, 'or of calling her my acquaintance.'

Booth ſtopped her ſhort, as ſhe was running into another fit of paſſion, and begged her to omit all for-

mer matters, and acquaint him with that part of her hiſtory to which he was an entire ſtranger.

She then renewed her diſcourſe as follows---'You 'know, Mr. Booth, I ſoon afterwards left that town, 'upon the death of my grandmother, and returned 'home to my father's houſe; where I had not been 'long arrived before ſome troops of dragoons came to 'quarter in our neighbourhood. Among the officers, 'there was a cornet, whoſe deteſted name was Hebbers '---a name I could ſcarce repeat, had I not at the 'ſame time the pleaſure to reflect that he is now no 'more. My father, you know, who was a hearty 'well-wiſher to the preſent government, uſed always 'to invite the officers to his houſe; ſo did he theſe. 'Nor was it long before this cornet, in ſo particular a 'manner recommended himſelf to the poor old gentle-'man, (I cannot think of him without tears!) that 'our houſe became his principal habitation; and he 'was rarely at his quarters, unleſs when his ſuperior 'officers obliged him to be there. I ſhall ſay nothing 'of his perſon, nor could that be any recommendation 'to a man: it was ſuch, however, as no woman could 'have made an objection to. Nature had certainly 'wrapt up her odious work in a moſt beautiful cover-'ing. To ſay the truth, he was the handſomeſt man, 'except one only, that I ever ſaw---I aſſure you, I 'have ſeen a handſomer---but---well. He had, be-'ſides, all the qualifications of a gentleman; was 'genteel, and extremely polite; ſpoke French well, 'and danced to a miracle; but what chiefly recom-'mended him to my father, was his ſkill in muſick, 'of which you know that dear man was the moſt vio-'lent lover. I wiſh he was not too ſuſceptible of flat-'tery on that head; for I have heard Hebbers often 'greatly commend my father's performance, and have 'obſerved, that the good man was wonderfully pleaſed 'with ſuch commendations. To ſay the truth, it is 'the only way I can account for the extraordinary

friend-

'friendſhip which my father conceived for this perſon; 'ſuch a friendſhip, that he at laſt became a part of our 'family.

'This very circumſtance, which, as I am convinced, 'ſtrongly recommended him to my father, had the very 'contrary effect with me: I had never any delight in 'muſick; and it was not without much difficulty I 'was prevailed on to learn to play on the harpſichord, 'in which I had made a very ſlender progreſs. As 'this man, therefore, was frequently the occaſion of 'my being importuned to play againſt my will, I began 'to entertain ſome diſlike for him on that account; 'and, as to his perſon, I aſſure you, I long continued 'to look on it with great indifference.'

'How ſtrange will the art of this man appear to you 'preſently, who had ſufficient addreſs to convert that 'very circumſtance which had at firſt occaſioned my 'diſlike, into the firſt ſeeds of affection for him!

'You have often, I believe, heard my ſiſter Betty 'play on the harpſichord: ſhe was, indeed, reputed 'the beſt performer in the whole country.

'I was the fartheſt in the world from regarding this 'perfection of her's with envy. In reality, perhaps, 'I deſpiſed all perfection of this kind; at leaſt, as I 'had neither ſkill nor ambition to excel this way, I 'looked upon it as a matter of mere indifference.

'Hebbers firſt put this emulation in my head. He 'took great pains to perſuade me, that I had much 'greater abilities of the muſical kind than my ſiſter; 'and that I might with the greateſt eaſe, if I pleaſed, 'excel her: offering me, at the ſame time, his aſſiſ-'tance, if I would reſolve to undertake it.

'When he had ſufficiently inflamed my ambition, 'in which, perhaps, he found too little difficulty, the 'continual praiſes of my ſiſter, which before I had 'diſregarded, became more and more nauſeous in my 'ears; and the rather, as muſic being the favourite 'paſſion of my father, I became apprehenſive (not

without

'without frequent hints from Hebbers of that nature)
'that she might gain too great a preference in his fa-
'vour.

'To my harpsichord then I applied myself night and
'day, with such industry and attention, that I soon
'began to perform in a tolerable manner. I do not ab-
'solutely say I excelled my sister, for many were of a
'different opinion; but, indeed, there might be some
'partiality in all that.

'Hebbers, at least, declared himself on my side,
'and nobody could doubt his judgment. He asserted
'openly, that I played in the better manner of the
'two: and one day, when I was playing to him alone,
'he affected to burst into a rapture of admiration; and
'squeezing me gently by the hand, said---"There,
"Madam! I now declare you excel your sister as much
"in musick as," added he, in a whispering sigh, "you
"do her, and all the world, in every other charm."

'No woman can bear any superiority in whatever
'thing she desires to excel in. I now began to hate all
'the admirers of my sister, to be uneasy at every com-
'mendation bestowed on her skill in musick, and conse-
'quently to love Hebbers for the preference which he
'gave to mine.

'It was now that I began to survey the handsome
'person of Hebbers with pleasure. And here, Mr.
'Booth, I will betray to you the grand secret of our sex.
'Many women, I believe, do, with great innocence,
'and even with great indifference, converse with men of
'the finest persons: but this I am confident may be
'affirmed with truth, that when once a woman comes
'to ask this question of herself---"Is the man whom I
"like for some other reason, handsome?" her fate, and
'his too, very strongly depend on her answering in the
'affirmative.

'Hebbers no sooner perceived that he made an im-
'pression on my heart; of which, I am satisfied, I gave
'him too undeniable tokens; than he affected, on a
'sudden, to shun me in the most apparent manner. He

'wore the moſt melancholy air in my preſence; and by 'his dejected looks and ſighs, firmly perſuaded me, that 'there was ſome ſecret ſorrow labouring in his boſom; 'nor will it be difficult to imagine to what cauſe I im-'puted it.

'Whilſt I was wiſhing for his declaration of a paſ-'ſion, in which, I thought, I could not be miſtaken, 'and, at the ſame time, trembling, whenever we met, 'with the apprehenſions of this very declaration, the 'widow Carey came from London to make us a viſit, 'intending to ſtay the whole ſummer at our houſe.

'Thoſe who know Mrs. Carey will ſcarce think 'I do her an injury, in ſaying ſhe is far from being 'handſome; and yet ſhe is as finiſhed a coquette as if 'ſhe had the higheſt beauty to ſupport that character. 'But, perhaps, you have ſeen her; and, if you have, 'I am convinced you will readily ſubſcribe to my 'opinion.'

Booth anſwered, he had not; and then ſhe proceeded as in the following chapter.

CHAP. VIII.

The Hiſtory of Miſs Matthews continued.

'THIS young lady had not been three days with us 'before Hebbers grew ſo particular with her, that 'it was generally obſerved; and my poor father, who, 'I believe, loved the cornet as if he had been his ſon, 'began to jeſt on the occaſion, as one who would not 'be diſpleaſed at throwing a good jointure into the arms 'of his friend.

'You will eaſily gueſs, Sir, the diſpoſition of my 'mind on this occaſion: but I was not permitted to 'ſuffer long under it; for one day when Hebbers was 'alone with me, he took an opportunity of expreſſing 'his abhorrence at the thoughts of marrying for inte-'reſt, contrary to his inclinations. I was warm on 'the ſubject; and, I believe, went ſo far as to ſay, that 'none but fools and villains did ſo. He replied, with a 'ſigh, "Yes, Madam; but what would you think of "a man whoſe heart is all the while bleeding for ano-

"ther

" ther woman, to whom he would willingly ſacrifice " the world; but becauſe he muſt ſacrifice her intereſt " as well as his own, never durſt even give her a hint " of that paſſion which was preying on his very vitals? " Do you believe, Miſs Fanny, there is ſuch a wretch " on earth?" I anſwered with an aſſumed coldneſs, 'I did not believe there was. He then took me gently 'by the hand, and with a look ſo tender, that I cannot 'deſcribe it, vowed he was himſelf that wretch. Then 'ſtarting, as if conſcious of an error committed, he 'cried with a faultering voice---" What am I ſaying? " Pardon me, Miſs Fanny; ſince I beg only your pity, " I will never aſk for more." At theſe words, hearing 'my father coming up, I betrayed myſelf entirely; if, 'indeed, I had not done it before. I haſtily withdrew 'my hand, crying---" Huſh, for Heaven's ſake; my " father is juſt coming in!" my bluſhes, my look, and 'my accent, telling him, I ſuppoſe, all he wiſhed to 'know.

'A few days now brought matters to an eclairciſſe-'ment between us; the being undeceived in what had 'given me ſo much uneaſineſs, gave me a pleaſure too 'ſweet to be reſiſted. To triumph over the widow, for 'whom I had, in a very ſhort time, contracted a moſt 'inveterate hatred, was a pride not to be deſcribed. 'Hebbers appeared to me to be the cauſe of all this 'happineſs. I doubted not but that he had the moſt 'diſintereſted paſſion for me, and thought him every 'way worthy of it's return. I did return it, and ac-'cepted him as my lover.

'He declared the greateſt apprehenſions of my father's 'ſuſpicion, though I am convinced theſe were cauſeleſs, 'had his deſigns been honourable. To blind theſe, I 'conſented that he ſhould carry on ſham addreſſes to the 'widow, who was now a conſtant jeſt between us: and 'he pretended, from time to time, to acquaint me faith-'fully with every thing that paſſed at his interviews 'with her; nor was this faithleſs woman wanting in 'her part of the deceit. She carried herſelf to me all

'the while with a ſhew of affection, and pretended to 'have the utmoſt friendſhip for me. But ſuch are the 'friendſhips of women!'

At this remark, Booth, though enough affected at ſome parts of the ſtory, had great difficulty to refrain from laughter; but, by good luck, he eſcaped being perceived; and the lady went on without interruption.

'I am now come to a part of my narrative in which 'it is impoſſible to be particular without being tedious; 'for, as to the commerce between lovers, it is, I believe, 'much the ſame in all caſes; and there is, perhaps, 'ſcarce a ſingle phraſe that hath not been repeated ten 'millions of times.

'One thing, however, as I ſtrongly remarked it then, 'ſo I will repeat it to you now. In all our converſa- 'tions, in moments when he fell into the warmeſt rap- 'tures, and expreſſed the greateſt uneaſineſs at the delay 'of his joys, he ſeldom mentioned the word *marriage*; 'and never once ſolicited a day for that purpoſe. In- 'deed, women cannot be cautioned too much againſt 'ſuch lovers; for though I have heard, and perhaps 'truly, of ſome of our ſex of a virtue ſo exalted, that 'it is proof againſt every temptation; yet the generality, 'I am afraid, are too much in the power of a man to 'whom they have owned an affection. What is called 'being upon a good footing is, perhaps, being upon 'a very dangerous one; and a woman who hath given 'her conſent to marry can hardly be ſaid to be ſafe till 'ſhe is married.

'And now, Sir, I haſten to the period of my ruin. 'We had a wedding in our family; my muſical ſiſter 'was married to a young fellow as muſical as herſelf. 'Such a match, you may be ſure, amongſt other feſ- 'tivities, muſt have a ball. Oh, Mr. Booth! ſhall 'modeſty forbid me to remark to you what paſſed on 'that occaſion? But why do I mention modeſty, who 'have no pretenſions to it? Every thing was ſaid, and 'practiſed, on that occaſion, as if the purpoſe had been 'to inflame the mind of every woman preſent. That

'effect,

'effect, I freely own to you, it had with me. Muſic, 'dancing, wine, and the moſt luſcious converſation, in 'which my poor dear father innocently joined, raiſed 'ideas in me of which I ſhall for ever repent; and I 'wiſhed (why ſhould I deny it) that it had been my 'wedding, inſtead of my ſiſter's.

'The villain Hebbers danced with me that night, 'and loſt no opportunity of improving the occaſion. In 'ſhort, the dreadful evening came. My father, though 'it was a very unuſual thing with him, grew intoxica-'ted with liquor; moſt of the men were in the ſame 'condition; nay, I myſelf drank more than I was 'accuſtomed to, enough to enflame, though not to diſ-'order. I loſt my former bed-fellow, my ſiſter, and--- 'you may, I think, gueſs the reſt---the villain found 'means to ſteal to my chamber, and I was undone.

'Two months I paſſed in this deteſted commerce, 'buying, even then, my guilty, half-taſted pleaſures, 'at too dear a rate, with continual horror and appre-'henſion; but what have I paid ſince! what do I 'pay now, Mr. Booth! O may my fate be a warning 'to every woman to keep her innocence, to reſiſt every 'temptation, ſince ſhe is certain to repent of the fooliſh 'bargain! May it be a warning to her to deal with 'mankind with care and caution; to ſhun the leaſt ap-'proaches of diſhonour, and never to confide too much 'in the honeſty of a man, nor in her own ſtrength, 'where ſhe has ſo much at ſtake! let her remember ſhe 'walks on a precipice, and the bottomleſs pit is to 'receive her, if ſhe ſlips; nay, if ſhe makes but one 'falſe ſtep!

'I aſk your pardon, Mr. Booth; I might have 'ſpared theſe exhortations, ſince no woman hears me; 'but you will not wonder at ſeeing me affected on this 'occaſion.'

Booth declared he was much more ſurprized at her being able ſo well to preſerve her temper in recounting her ſtory.

'O Sir!' anſwered ſhe, 'I am at length reconciled to

'my fate; and I can now die with pleaſure, ſince I die 'revenged. I am not one of thoſe mean wretches, who 'can ſit down and lament their misfortunes. If I ever 'ſhed tears, they are the tears of indignation---but I 'will proceed.

'It was my fate now to ſolicit marriage; and I 'failed not to do it in the moſt earneſt manner. He an-'ſwered me at firſt with procraſtinations; declaring, 'from time to time, he would mention it to my father, 'and ſtill excuſing himſelf for not doing it. At laſt he 'thought on an expedient to obtain a longer reprieve. 'This was, by pretending that he ſhould, in a very 'few weeks, be preferred to the command of a troop; 'and then, he ſaid, he could with ſome confidence pro-'poſe the match.

'In this delay, I was perſuaded to acquieſce; and 'was, indeed, pretty eaſy; for I had not yet the leaſt 'miſtruſt of his honour: but what words can paint my 'ſenſations! when one morning he came into my room, 'with all the marks of dejection in his countenance, and 'throwing an open letter on the table, ſaid---"There "is news, Madam, in that letter, which I am unable "to tell you; nor can it give you more concern than it "hath given me!"

'This letter was from his captain, to acquaint him 'that the route, as they call it, was arrived, and that 'they were to march within two days. And this, I am 'ſince convinced, was what he expected, inſtead of the 'preferment which had been made the pretence of de-'laying our marriage.

'The ſhock which I felt at reading this was inex-'preſſible; occaſioned, indeed, principally by the de-'parture of a villain whom I loved. However, I ſoon 'acquired ſufficient preſence of mind to remember the 'main point; and I now inſiſted peremptorily on his 'making me immediately his wife, whatever might be 'the conſequence.

'He ſeemed thunderſtruck at this propoſal; being, I 'ſuppoſe, deſtitute of any excuſe: but I was too impa-

'tient

'tient to wait for an anſwer, and cried out with much 'eagerneſs---"Sure you cannot heſitate a moment upon "this matter!"---"Heſitate, Madam," replied he: "what you aſk is impoſſible: is this a time for me to "mention a thing of this kind to your father?" My 'eyes were now opened all at once; I fell into a rage 'little ſhort of madneſs. "Tell not me," I cried, "of impoſſibilities, nor times, nor of my father! my "honour, my reputation, my all, are at ſtake! I will "have no excuſe, no delay! Make me your wife this "inſtant, or I will proclaim you over the face of the "whole earth for the greateſt of villains!" He an-'ſwered, with a kind of ſneer---"What will you pro-"claim, Madam? whoſe honour will you injure?" My 'tongue faultered when I offered to reply, and I fell 'into a violent agony, which ended in a fit; nor do I 'remember any thing more that paſſed, till I found 'myſelf in the arms of my poor affrighted father.

'O, Mr. Booth, what was then my ſituation! I 'tremble even now from the reflection. I muſt ſtop a 'moment. I can go no farther.' Booth attempted all in his power to ſoothe her; and ſhe ſoon recovered her powers, and proceeded in her ſtory.

CHAP. IX.

In which Miſs Matthews concludes her Relation.

'BEFORE I had recovered my ſenſes, I had ſuf-'ficiently betrayed myſelf to the beſt of men; who, 'inſtead of upbraiding me, or exerting any anger, en-'deavoured to comfort me all he could, with aſſurances 'that all ſhould yet be well. This goodneſs of his 'affected me with inexpreſſible ſenſations: I proſtrated 'myſelf before him, embraced and kiſſed his knees, and 'almoſt diſſolved in tears, and a degree of tenderneſs 'hardly to be conceived. But I am running into too 'minute deſcriptions.

'Hebbers, ſeeing me in a fit, had left me, and ſent 'one of the ſervants to take care of me. He then ran 'away like a thief from the houſe, without taking his 'leave of my father, or once thanking him for all his 'civilities.

'civilities. He did not ſtop at his quarters, but made 'directly to London; apprehenſive, I believe, either of 'my father or brother's reſentment: for I am convinced 'he is a coward. Indeed, his fear of my brother was 'utterly groundleſs; for I believe he would rather have 'thanked any man who had deſtroyed me; and I am 'ſure I am not in the leaſt behind-hand with him in good 'wiſhes.

'All his inveteracy to me had, however, no effect on 'my father, at leaſt at that time; for though the good 'man took ſufficient occaſions to reprimand me for my 'paſt offence, he could not be brought to abandon me. 'A treaty of marriage was now ſet on foot, in which 'my father himſelf offered me to Hebbers, with a for-'tune ſuperior to that which had been given with my 'ſiſter; nor could all my brother's remonſtrances 'againſt it, as an act of the higheſt injuſtice, avail.

'Hebbers entered into the treaty, though not with 'much warmth. He had even the aſſurance to make 'additional demands on my father, which being com-'plied with, every thing was concluded, and the vil-'lain once more received into the houſe. He ſoon 'found means to obtain my forgiveneſs of his former 'behaviour; indeed, he convinced me (ſo fooliſhly 'blind is female love) that he had never been to blame.

'When every thing was ready for our nuptials, and 'the day of the ceremony was to be appointed, in the 'midſt of my happineſs, I received a letter from an un-'known hand, acquainting me (gueſs, Mr. Booth, 'how I was ſhocked at receiving it!) that Mr. Hebbers 'was already married to a woman in a diſtant part of 'the kingdom.

'I will not tire you with all that paſſed at our next 'interview. I communicated the letter to Hebbers; 'who, after ſome heſitation, owned the fact: and not 'only owned it, but had the addreſs to improve it to 'his own advantage, to make it the means of ſatisfying 'me concerning all his former delays; which, to ſay, 'the truth, I was not ſo much diſpleaſed at imputing it

'to

'to any degree of villainy, as I ſhould have been to 'impute it to the want of a ſufficient warmth of affec- 'tion; and though the diſappointment of all my hopes, 'at the very inſtant of their expected fruition, threw 'me into the moſt violent diſorders; yet when I came 'a little to myſelf, he had no great difficulty to per- 'ſuade me that in every inſtance, with regard to me, 'Hebbers had acted from no other motive than from the 'moſt ardent and ungovernable love. And there is, I 'believe, no crime which a woman will not forgive, 'when ſhe can derive it from that fountain. In ſhort, 'I forgave him all, and am willing to perſuade myſelf 'I am not weaker than the reſt of my ſex. Indeed, 'Mr. Booth, he hath a bewitching tongue, and is 'maſter of an addreſs that no woman could reſiſt. I do 'aſſure you, the charms of his perſon are his leaſt per- 'fection, at leaſt in my eye.'

Here Booth ſmiled, but happily without her perceiving it.

'A freſh difficulty (continued ſhe) now aroſe. This 'was, to excuſe the delay of the ceremony to my 'father, who every day very earneſtly urged it. This 'made me ſo very uneaſy, that I at laſt liſtened to a 'propoſal, which if any one, in the days of my inno- 'cence, or even a few days before, had aſſured me I 'could have ſubmitted to have thought of, I ſhould 'have treated the ſuppoſition with the higheſt contempt 'and indignation; nay, I ſcarce reflect on it with more 'horror than aſtoniſhment. In ſhort, I agreed to run 'away with him; to leave my father, my reputation, 'every thing which was or ought to have been dear to 'me, and to live with this villain as a miſtreſs, ſince I 'could not be his wife.

'Was not this an obligation of the higheſt and ten- 'dereſt kind? and had I not reaſon to expect every return 'in the man's power on whom I had conferred it?

'I will make ſhort of the remainder of my ſtory: 'for what is there of a woman worth relating, after 'what I have told you!

'Above

'Above a year I lived with this man in an obſcure 'court in London, during which time I had a child by 'him, whom Heaven, I thank it, hath been pleaſed to 'take to itſelf.

'During many months he behaved to me with all the 'apparent tenderneſs, and even fondneſs, imaginable; 'but, alas! how poor was my enjoyment of this, 'compared to what it would have been in another ſitu-'ation! When he was preſent, life was barely tolera-'ble; but when he was abſent, nothing could equal 'the miſery I endured. I paſſed my hours almoſt en-'tirely alone: for no company, but what I deſpiſed, 'would conſort with me. Abroad I ſcarce ever went, 'leſt I ſhould meet any of my former acquaintance; 'for their ſight would have plunged a thouſand daggers 'in my ſoul. My only diverſion was going, very 'ſeldom, to a play, where I hid myſelf in the gallery, 'with a daughter of the woman of the houſe---a girl, 'indeed, of good ſenſe, and many good qualities: but 'how much beneath me was it to be the companion of a 'creature ſo low! O Heavens, when I have ſeen my 'equals glittering in a ſide-box, how have the thoughts 'of my loſt honour torn my ſoul!'

'Pardon me, dear Madam,' cries Booth, 'for in-'terrupting you; but I am under the utmoſt anxiety to 'know what became of your poor father, for whom I 'have ſo great a reſpect, and who, I am convinced, 'muſt ſo bitterly feel your loſs.'

'O Mr. Booth!' anſwered ſhe, 'he was ſcarce ever 'out of my thoughts. His dear image ſtill obtruded 'itſelf into my mind, and I believe would have broken 'my heart, had I not taken a very prepoſterous way to 'eaſe myſelf. I am, indeed, almoſt aſhamed to tell 'you; but neceſſity put it in my head. You will 'think the matter too trifling to have been remembered, 'and ſo it ſurely was; nor ſhould I have remembered it 'on any other occaſion. You muſt know then, Sir, 'that my brother was always my inveterate enemy, 'and altogether as fond of my ſiſter. He once prevailed

'with

'with my father to let him take my ſiſter with him in 'the chariot, and by that means I was diſappointed of 'going to a ball which I had ſet my heart on. The 'diſappointment, I aſſure you, was great at the time; 'but I had long ſince forgotten it. I muſt have been a 'very bad woman, if I had not; for it was the only 'thing in which I can remember that my father ever 'diſobliged me. However, I now revived this in my 'mind, which I artificially worked up into ſo high an 'injury, that I aſſure you it afforded me no little com-'fort. When any tender idea intruded into my boſom, 'I immediately raiſed this phantom of an injury in my 'imagination, and it cōnſiderably leſſened the fury of 'that ſorrow which I ſhould have otherwiſe felt for the 'loſs of ſo good a father, who died within two months 'of my departure from him.

'And now, Sir, to draw to a concluſion. One night, 'as I was in the gallery at Drury-lane playhouſe, I ſaw 'below me, in a ſide-box, (ſhe was once below me in 'every place) that widow whom I mentioned to you 'before. I had ſcarce caſt my eyes on this woman, 'before I was ſo ſhocked with the ſight, that it almoſt 'deprived me of my ſenſes; for the villain Hebbers 'came preſently in, and ſeated himſelf behind her.

'He had been almoſt a month from me, and I be-'lieved him to be at his quarters in Yorkſhire. Gueſs 'what were my ſenſations, when I beheld him ſitting 'by that baſe woman, and talking to her with the ut-'moſt familiarity! I could not long endure the ſight; 'and having acquainted my companion that I was 'taken ſuddenly ill, I forced her to go home with me at 'the end of the ſecond act.

'After a reſtleſs and ſleepleſs night, when I roſe the 'next morning, I had the comfort to receive a viſit 'from the woman of the houſe; who, after a very 'ſhort introduction, aſked me when I had heard from 'the captain, and when I expected to ſee him. I had 'not ſtrength or ſpirits to make her any anſwer; and 'ſhe proceeded thus---"Indeed, I did not think the

"Captain

" captain would have uſed me ſo. My huſband was an
" officer of the army as well as himſelf; and if a body
" is a little low in the world, I am ſure that is no rea-
" ſon for folks to trample on a body. I defy the world
" to ſay as I ever was guilty of any ill thing."---" For
" Heaven's ſake, Madam!" ſays I, " what do you
" mean?---" Mean!" cries ſhe; " I am ſure if I had
" not thought you had been captain Hebber's lady, his
" lawful lady too, you ſhould never have ſet footing in
" my houſe. I would have captain Hebbers know,
" that though I am reduced to let lodgings, I never
" have entertained any but perſons of character." In
' this manner, Sir, ſhe ran on, ſaying many ſhocking
' things not worth repeating, till my anger at laſt got
' the better of my patience, as well as my ſorrow, and
' I puſhed her out of the room.

' She had not been long gone, before her daughter
' came to me, and after many expreſſions of tenderneſs
' and pity, acquainted me, that her mother had juſt
' found out, by means of the captain's ſervant, that
' the captain was married to another lady: " which, if
" you did not know before, Madam," ſaid ſhe, " I
" am ſorry to be the meſſenger of ſuch ill news."

' Think, Mr. Booth, what I muſt have endured to
' ſee myſelf humbled before ſuch a creature as this---
' the daughter of a woman who lets lodgings! however,
' having recollected myſelf a little, I thought it would
' be in vain to deny any thing; ſo knowing this to be
' one of the beſt-natured and moſt ſenſible girls in the
' world, I reſolved to tell her my whole ſtory, and for
' the future to make her my confidante. I anſwered
' her therefore with a good deal of aſſurance, that ſhe
' need not regret telling me this piece of ill news, for
' I had known it before I came to her houſe.'

" Pardon me, Madam," replied the girl; " you
" cannot poſſibly have known it ſo long, for he hath
" not been married above a week; laſt night was the
" firſt time of his appearing in publick with his wife at

" the

"the play. Indeed, I knew very well the cauſe of "your uneaſineſs there; but would not mention------"

"His wife at the play?" anſwered I eagerly: "what wife! whom do you mean?"

"I mean the widow Carey, Madam," replied ſhe; "to whom the captain was married a few days ſince. "His ſervant was here laſt night to pay for your "lodging; and he told it my mother."

'I know not what anſwer I made, or whether I made 'any: I preſently fell dead on the floor, and it was with 'great difficulty I was brought back to life by the poor 'girl; for neither the mother, nor the maid of the 'houſe, would lend me any aſſiſtance; both ſeemed to 'regard me rather as a monſter than a woman.

'Scarce had I recovered the uſe of my ſenſes, when I 'received a letter from the villain, declaring he had 'not aſſurance to ſee my face, and very kindly advi-'ſing me to endeavour to reconcile myſelf to my family; 'concluding with an offer, in caſe I did not ſucceed, 'to allow me twenty pounds a year to ſupport me in 'ſome remote part of the kingdom.

'I need not mention my indignation at theſe propo-'ſals. In the higheſt agony of rage, I went in a chair 'to the deteſted houſe, where I eaſily got acceſs to the 'wretch I had devoted to deſtruction; whom I no 'ſooner found within my reach, than I plunged a 'drawn penknife, which I had prepared in my pocket 'for the purpoſe, into his accurſed heart. For this 'fact I was immediately ſeized, and ſoon after commit-'mitted hither; and for this fact I am ready to die, 'and ſhall with pleaſure receive the ſentence of the law.

'Thus, Sir,' ſaid ſhe, 'I have related to you my 'unhappy ſtory; and if I have tired your patience, by 'dwelling too long on thoſe parts which affected me the 'moſt, I aſk your pardon.'

Booth made a proper ſpeech on this occaſion; and having expreſſed much concern at her preſent ſituation, concluded, that he hoped her ſentence would be milder than ſhe ſeemed to expect.

Her reply to this was full of ſo much bitterneſs and indignation, that we do not think proper to record the ſpeech at length: in which, having vented her paſſion, ſhe all at once put on a ſerene countenance; and, with an air of great complacency, ſaid---'Well, 'Mr. Booth, I think I have now a great right to 'ſatisfy my curioſity, at the expence of your breath. 'I may ſay it is not altogether a vain curioſity; for 'perhaps I have had inclination enough to intereſt my-'ſelf in whatever concerns you: but no matter for that '---thoſe days (added ſhe with a ſigh) are now over.'

Booth, who was extremely good-natured and well-bred, told her that ſhe ſhould not command him twice whatever was in his power: and then, after the uſual apology, was going to begin his hiſtory, when the keeper arrived, and acquainted the lady that dinner was ready: at the ſame time ſaying---'I ſuppoſe, Madam, 'as the gentleman is an acquaintance of yours, he muſt 'dine with us too.'

Miſs Matthews told the keeper that ſhe had only one word to mention in private to the gentleman, and that then they would both attend him. She then pulled her purſe from a pocket in which were upwards of twenty guineas, being the remainder of the money for which ſhe had ſold a gold repeating watch, her father's preſent, with ſome other trinkets, and deſired Mr. Booth to take what he ſhould have occaſion for: ſaying---'You know, I believe, dear Will, I never valued mo-'ney; and now, I am ſure, I ſhall have very little uſe 'for it.' Booth, with much difficulty, accepted of two guineas; and then they both together attended the keeper.

CHAP. X.

Table-talk; conſiſting of a facetious Diſcourſe that paſſed in the Priſon.

THERE were aſſembled at the table the governor of theſe (not improperly called infernal) regions; the lieutenant-governor, vulgarly named the firſt turnkey; Miſs Matthews, Mr. Booth, Mr. Robinſon, the gambler,

gambler, ſeveral other priſoners of both ſexes, and one Murphy an attorney.

The governor took the firſt opportunity to bring the affair of Miſs Matthews upon the carpet; and then turning to Murphy, he ſaid---'It is very lucky this 'gentleman happens to be preſent: I do aſſure you, Ma-'dam, your cauſe cannot be in abler hands. He is, 'I believe, the beſt man in England at a defence; I 'have known him often ſucceed againſt the moſt poſitive 'evidence.'

'Fie, Sir!' anſwered Murphy; 'you know I hate 'all this; but if the lady will truſt me with her cauſe, 'I will do the beſt in my power.---Come, Madam, do 'not be diſcouraged; a bit of manſlaughter and cold 'iron, I hope, will be the worſt: or perhaps we may 'come off better, with a ſlice of chance-medley, or *ſe* '*defendendo*.

'I am very ignorant of the law, Sir,' cries the lady.

'Yes, Madam,' anſwered Murphy; 'it cannot be 'expected you ſhould underſtand it. There are very 'few of us who profeſs it, that underſtand the whole; 'nor is it neceſſary we ſhould. There is a great deal of 'rubbiſh, of little uſe, about indictments, and abate-'ments, and bars, and ejectments, and trovers, and 'ſuch ſtuff, with which people cram their heads to little 'purpoſe. The chapter of evidence is the main buſi-'neſs; that is the ſheet anchor: that is the rudder 'which brings the veſſel ſafe *in portum*. Evidence is, 'indeed, the whole, the *ſumma totidis*; for *de non ap-'parentibus et non* inſiſtentibus, *eadem eſt ratio*.

'If you addreſs yourſelf to me, Sir,' ſaid the lady, 'you are much too learned, I aſſure you, for my under-'ſtanding.'

'*Tace*, Madam,' anſwered Murphy, is Latin for a 'candle; I commend your prudence. I ſhall know the 'particulars of your caſe when we are alone.'

'I hope the lady,' ſaid Robinſon, 'hath no ſuſpicion 'of any perſon here. I hope we are all perſons of ho-'nour at this table.'

'D---n my eyes, answered a well-dressed woman, 'I can answer for myself and the other ladies: though 'I never saw the lady in my life, she need not be shy 'of us, d---n my eyes! I scorn to rap* against any 'lady.

'D---n me, Madam,' cried another lady, 'I honour 'what you have done. I once put a knife into a cull 'myself; so my service to you, Madam; and I wish 'you may come off with *se diffidendo*, with all my 'heart.'

'I beg, good woman,' said Miss Matthews, 'you 'would talk on some other subject, and give yourself 'no concern about my affairs.'

'You see ladies,' cried Murphy, 'the gentlewoman 'doth not care to talk on this matter before company; 'so pray do not press her.'

'Nay, I value the lady's acquaintance no more than 'she values mine,' cries the first woman who spoke. 'I have kept as good company as the lady, I believe, 'every day in the week. Good woman! I do not use 'to be so treated: if the lady says such another word 'to me, d---n me, I will darken her day-lights. 'Marry come up, good woman! The lady's a whore 'as well as myself; and though I am sent hither to 'mill doll, d---n my eyes! I have money enough to 'buy it off as well as the lady herself.'

Action might, perhaps, soon have followed this speech, had not the keeper interposed his authority, and put an end to any farther dispute. Soon after which the company broke up; and none but himself, Mr. Murphy, Captain Booth, and Miss Matthews, remained together.

Miss Matthews, then, at the entreaty of the keeper, began to open her case to Mr. Murphy, whom she admitted to be her solicitor, though she still declared she was indifferent as to the event of the trial.

Mr. Murphy having heard all the particulars, with

* A cant word, meaning to swear, or rather to perjure yourself.

which

which the reader is already acquainted, (as far as related to the murder) ſhook his head, and ſaid---'There 'is but one circumſtance, Madam, which I wiſh was 'out of the caſe; and that we muſt put out of it: I 'mean the carrying the penknife drawn into the room 'with you; for that ſeems to imply malice prepenſive, 'as we call it in the law: this circumſtance, therefore, 'muſt not appear againſt you; and if the ſervant who 'was in the room obſerved this, he muſt be bought off 'at all hazards. All here, you ſay, are friends; there-'fore, I tell you openly, you muſt furniſh me with 'money ſufficient for this purpoſe. Malice is all we 'have to guard againſt.

'I would not preſume, Sir,' cries Booth, 'to inform 'you in the law; but I have heard, in caſe of ſtabbing, 'a man may be indicted upon the ſtatute; and it is 'capital, though no malice appears.'

'You ſay true, Sir,' anſwered Murphy: 'a man 'may be indicted *contra formam ſtatutis*; and that 'method, I allow you, requires no malice. I preſume, 'you are a lawyer, Sir?'

'No, indeed, Sir,' anſwered Booth; 'I know nothing 'of the law.'

'Then, Sir, I will tell you. If a man be indicted '*contra formam ſtatutis*, as we ſay, no malice is ne-'ceſſary; becauſe the form of the ſtatute makes ma-'lice: and then what we have to guard againſt is, 'having ſtruck the firſt blow. Pox on't, it is unlucky 'this was done in a room: if it had been in the ſtreet, 'we could have had five or ſix witneſſes to have proved 'the firſt blow, cheaper than I am afraid we ſhall get 'this one; for when a man knows, from the unhappy 'circumſtances of the caſe, that you can procure no 'other witneſs but himſelf, he is always dear. It is 'ſo in all other ways of buſineſs. I am very *implicit* 'you ſee; but we are all among friends. The ſafeſt 'way is to furniſh me with money enough to offer him 'a good round ſum at once; and I think (it is for your 'good I ſpeak) fifty pounds is the leaſt that can be

'offered him. I do assure you, I would offer him no 'less, was it my own case.'

'And do you think, Sir,' said she, 'that I would 'save my life at the expence of hiring another to per-'jure himself?'

'Aye, surely do I,' cries Murphy: 'for where is 'the fault, admitting there is some fault in perjury, as 'you call it? And, to be sure, it is such a matter as every 'man would rather wish to avoid than not; and yet, 'as it may be managed, there is not so much as some 'people are apt to imagine in it; for he need not kiss 'the book, and then, pray, where is the perjury? But 'if the cryer is sharper than ordinary, what is it he 'kisses? Is it any thing but a bit of calf's skin? I am 'sure a man must be a very bad Christian himself who 'would not do so much as that to save the life of any 'Christian whatever, much more of so pretty a lady. 'Indeed, Madam, if we can make out but a tolerable 'case, so much beauty will go a great way with the 'judge, and the jury too.'

The latter part of this speech, notwithstanding the mouth it came from, caused Miss Matthews to suppress much of the indignation which began to arise at the former; and she answered with a smile---'Sir, you are 'a great casuist in these matters; but we need argue no 'longer concerning them; for if fifty pounds would 'save my life, I assure you I could not command that 'sum. The little money I have in my pocket is all I 'can call my own; and, I apprehend, in the situation 'I am in, I shall have very little of that to spare.'

'Come, come, Madam,' cries Murphy, 'life is 'sweet, let me tell you; and never sweeter than when 'we are near losing it. I have known many a man 'very brave and undaunted at his first commitment, 'who, when business began to thicken a little upon 'him, hath changed his note. It is no time to be sav-'ing, in your condition.'

The keeper, who, after the liberality of Miss Matthews, and on seeing a purse of guineas in her hand,

had

had conceived a great opinion of her wealth, no ſooner heard that the ſum which he had, in intention, entirely confiſcated for his own uſe, was attempted to be broke in upon, than he thought it high time to be upon his guard. 'To be ſure,' cries he, 'Mr. Murphy, life is 'ſweet, as you ſay; that muſt be acknowledged: to be 'ſure, life is ſweet! but, ſweet as it is, no perſon can 'advance more than they are worth to ſave it. And, 'indeed, if the lady can command no more money than 'that little ſhe mentions, ſhe is to be commended for 'her unwillingneſs to part with any of it; for, to be 'ſure, as ſhe ſays, ſhe will want every farthing of that, 'to live like a gentlewoman till ſhe comes to her trial. 'And, to be ſure, as ſweet as life is, people ought to 'take care to be able to live ſweetly while they do live; 'beſides, I cannot help ſaying, the lady ſhews herſelf 'to be what ſhe is, by her abhorrence of perjury, which 'is certainly a very dreadful crime. And, though the 'not kiſſing the book doth, as you ſay, make a great 'deal of difference; and, if a man had a great while 'to live and repent, perhaps he might ſwallow it well 'enough; yet, when people comes to be near their end, '(as who can venture to foretel what will be the lady's 'caſe) they ought to take care not to overburden their 'conſcience. I hope the lady's caſe will not be found 'murder; for I am ſure I always wiſh well to all my 'priſoners, who ſhew themſelves to be gentlemen, or 'gentlewomen; yet one ſhould always fear the worſt.'

'Indeed, Sir, you ſpeak like an oracle,' anſwered the lady; 'and one ſubornation of perjury would ſit 'heavier on my conſcience, than twenty ſuch murders 'as I am guilty of.'

'Nay, to be ſure, Madam,' anſwered the keeper, 'nobody can pretend to tell what provocation you muſt 'have had; and certainly, it can never be imagined, 'that a lady who behaves herſelf ſo handſomely as you 'have done ever ſince you have been under my keys, 'ſhould be guilty of killing a man without being very 'highly provoked to do it.'

Mr. Murphy

Mr. Murphy was, I believe, going to anſwer, when he was called out of the room; after which, nothing paſſed between the remaining perſons worth relating, till Booth and the lady retired back again into the lady's apartment.

Here they fell immediately to commenting on the foregoing diſcourſe: but as their comments were, I believe, the ſame with what moſt readers have made on the ſame occaſion, we ſhall omit them. At laſt, Miſs Matthews reminding her companion of his promiſe of relating to her what had befallen him ſince the interruption of their former acquaintance, he began, as is written in the next book of this hiſtory.

BOOK II.

CHAP. I.

In which Captain Booth begins to relate his Hiſtory.

THE tea table being removed, and Mr. Booth and the lady left alone, he proceeded as follows---

'Since you deſire, Madam, to know the particulars 'of my courtſhip to that beſt and deareſt of women, 'whom I afterwards married, I will endeavour to recol-'lect them as well as I can; at leaſt all thoſe incidents 'which are moſt worth relating to you.

'If the vulgar opinion of fatality in marriage had 'ever any ſanction, it ſurely appeared in my mar-'riage with my Amelia. I knew her in the firſt dawn 'of her beauty; and, I believe, Madam, ſhe had as 'much as ever fell to the ſhare of a woman; but 'though I always admired her, it was long without any 'ſpark of love. Perhaps the general admiration which 'at that time purſued her, the reſpect paid her by per-'ſons of the higheſt rank, and the numberleſs addreſſes 'which were made her by men of great fortune, pre-'vented my aſpiring at the poſſeſſion of thoſe charms, 'which ſeemed ſo abſolutely out of my reach. How-'ever it was, I aſſure you, the accident which deprived 'her of the admiration of others, made the firſt great

'im-

'impreſſion on my heart in her favour. The injury 'done to her beauty by the overturning of a chaiſe, by 'which, as you may well remember, her lovely noſe 'was beat all to pieces, gave me an aſſurance that the 'woman who had been ſo much adored for the charms 'of her perſon, deſerved a much higher adoration to be 'paid to her mind; for that ſhe was in the latter re-'ſpect infinitely more ſuperior to the reſt of her ſex, 'than ſhe had ever been in the former.'

'I admire your taſte extremely,' cried the lady. 'I 'remember perfectly well the great heroiſm with which 'your Amelia bore that misfortune.'---'Good Heavens! 'Madam,' anſwered he, 'what a magnanimity of 'mind did her behaviour demonſtrate! If the world 'have extolled the firmneſs of ſoul in a man who can 'ſupport the loſs of fortune; of a general who can be 'compoſed after the loſs of a victory; or of a king 'who can be contented with the loſs of a crown; with 'what aſtoniſhment ought we to behold, with what 'praiſes to honour, a young lady who can, with 'patience and reſignation, ſubmit to the loſs of exquiſite 'beauty: in other words, to the loſs of fortune, power, 'glory; every thing which human nature is apt to 'court and rejoice in! What muſt be the mind, which 'can bear to be deprived of all theſe in a moment, and, 'by an unfortunate, trifling accident; which could 'ſupport all this, together with the moſt exquiſite tor-'ments of body, and with dignity, with reſignation, 'without complaining, almoſt without a tear, undergo 'the moſt painful and dreadful operations of ſurgery in 'ſuch a ſituation.' Here he ſtopped, and a torrent of tears guſhed from his eyes; ſuch tears as are apt to flow from a truly noble heart at the hearing of any thing ſurpriſingly great and glorious. As ſoon as he was able, he again proceeded thus---

'Would you think, Miſs Matthews, that the mis-'fortune of my Amelia was capable of any aggrava-'tion! I aſſure you, ſhe hath often told me it was 'aggravated with a circumſtance which outweighed all

'the

'the other ingredients. This was the cruel insults
'she received from some of her most intimate acquain-
'tance; several of whom, after many distortions and
'grimaces have turned their heads aside, unable to sup-
'port their secret triumph, and burst into a loud laugh
'in her hearing.'

'Good Heaven!' cried Miss Matthews, 'what de-
'testable actions will this contemptible passion of envy
'prevail on our sex to commit!'

'An occasion of this kind, as she hath since told me,
'made the first impression on her gentle heart in my
'favour. I was one day in company with several
'young ladies, or rather young devils, where poor
'Amelia's accident was the subject of much mirth and
'pleasantry. One of these said, she hoped Miss would
'not hold her head so high for the future. Another
'answered---"I do not know, Madam, what she may
"do with her head, but I am convinced she will never
"more turn up her nose at her betters." Another
'cried---"What a very proper match might now be
"made between Amelia and a certain captain!" who
'had unfortunately received an injury in the same part,
'though from no shameful cause. Many other sar-
'casms were thrown out, very unworthy to be repeated.
'I was hurt with perceiving so much malice in human
'shape; and cried out, very bluntly---"Indeed, ladies,
"you need not express such satisfaction at poor Miss
"Emily's accident; for she will still be the hand-
"somest woman in England." This speech of mine
'was variously repeated; by some to my honour, and
'by others represented in a contrary light: indeed, it
'was often reported to be much ruder than it was.
'However, it at length reached Amelia's ears. She
'said, she was very much obliged to me; since I could
'have so much compassion for her as to be rude to a
'lady on her account.

'About a month after the accident, when Amelia
'began to see company in a mask, I had the honour to
'drink tea with her. We were alone together; and I

'begged

'begged her to indulge my curioſity by ſhewing me her 'face. She anſwered, in a moſt obliging manner--- "Perhaps, Mr. Booth, you will as little know me "when my maſk is off as when it is on;" and at the 'ſame inſtant unmaſked. The ſurgeon's ſkill was the 'leaſt I conſidered. A thouſand tender ideas ruſhed 'all at once on my mind. I was unable to contain my-'ſelf; and, eagerly kiſſing her hand, I cried---"Upon "my ſoul, Madam, you never appeared to me ſo "lovely as at this inſtant!" Nothing more remarka-'ble paſſed at this viſit; but I ſincerely believe we were 'neither of us hereafter indifferent to each other.

'Many months, however, paſſed after this, before I 'ever thought ſeriouſly of making her my wife. Not 'that I wanted ſufficient love for Amelia: indeed, it 'aroſe from the vaſt affection I bore her. I conſidered 'my own as a deſperate fortune, her's as entirely de-'pendent on her mother; who was a woman, you 'know, of violent paſſions, and very unlikely to con-'ſent to a match ſo highly contrary to the intereſt of 'her daughter. The more I loved Amelia, the more 'firmly I reſolved within myſelf never to propoſe love to 'her ſeriouſly. Such a dupe was my underſtanding to 'my heart! and ſo fooliſhly did I imagine I could be 'maſter of a flame to which I was every day adding 'fuel!

'O Miſs Matthews! we have heard of men entirely 'maſters of their paſſions, and of hearts which can 'carry this fire in them, and conceal it at their pleaſure! 'Perhaps there may be ſuch; but, if there are, thoſe 'hearts may be compared, I believe, to damps, in 'which it is more difficult to keep fire alive than to 'prevent its blazing: in mine, it was placed in the 'midſt of combuſtible matter.

'After ſeveral viſits, in which looks and ſighs had 'been interchanged on both ſides, but without the 'leaſt mention of paſſion in private, one day the diſcourſe 'between us, when alone, happened to turn on love: 'I ſay happened; for I proteſt it was not deſigned on

'my

'my side, and I am as firmly convinced not on her's. 'I was now no longer master of myself: I declared 'myself the most wretched of all martyrs to this tender 'passion---that I had long concealed it from its object. 'At length, after mentioning many particulars---sup-'pressing, however, those which must necessarily have 'brought it home to Amelia---I concluded with beg-'ging her to be the confidante of my amour, and to 'give me her advice on that occasion.

'Amelia---O, I shall never forget the dear perturba-'tion !---appeared all confused at this instant. She 'trembled, turned pale, and discovered how well she 'understood me, by a thousand more symptoms than I 'could take notice of, in a state of mind so very little 'different from her own. At last, with faultering 'accents, she said, I had made a very ill choice of a 'counsellor in a matter in which she was so ignorant: 'adding, at last,---"I believe, Mr. Booth, you gen-"tlemen want very little advice in these affairs, which "you all understand better than we do."

'I will relate no more of our conversation at pre-'sent; indeed, I am afraid I tire you with too many 'particulars.'

'O no,' answered she, 'I should be glad to hear 'every step of an amour which had so tender a begin-'ning. Tell me every thing you said or did, if you 'can remember it.'

'He then proceeded; and so will we in the next chapter.

CHAP. II.

Mr. Booth continues his Story. In this Chapter there are some Passages that may serve as a Kind of Touch-stone, by which a young Lady may examine the Heart of her Lover. I would advise, therefore, that every Lover be obliged to read it over in the Presence of his Mistress, and that she carefully watch his Emotions while he is reading.

'I Was under the utmost concern,' cries Booth, 'when I retired from my visit, and had reflected 'coolly on what I had said. I now saw plainly that I had

'had made downright love to Amelia; and I feared, 'such was my vanity, that I had already gone too far, 'and been too ſucceſsful. Feared! do I ſay? Could I 'fear what I hoped? How ſhall I deſcribe the anxiety 'of my mind!'

'You need give yourſelf no great pain,' cried Miſs Matthews, 'to deſcribe what I can ſo eaſily gueſs. To 'be honeſt with you, Mr. Booth, I do not agree with 'your lady's opinion, that the men have a ſuperior un-'derſtanding in matters of love. Men are often blind 'to the paſſions of women; but every woman is as quick 'ſighted as a hawk on theſe occaſions: nor is there one 'article in the whole ſcience which is not underſtood by 'all our ſex.'

'However, Madam,' ſaid Mr. Booth, 'I now un-'dertook to deceive Amelia. I abſtained three days 'from ſeeing her: to ſay the truth, I endeavoured to 'work myſelf up to a reſolution of leaving her for ever; 'but when I could not ſo far ſubdue my paſſion---But 'why do I talk nonſenſe, of ſubduing paſſion! I ſhould 'ſay, when no other paſſion could ſurmount my love, I 'returned to viſit her; and now I attempted the ſtrangeſt 'project which ever entered into the ſilly head of a lover. 'This was to perſuade Amelia that I was really in love 'in another place, and had literally expreſſed my mean-'ing, when I aſked her advice, and deſired her to be my 'confidante.

'I therefore forged a meeting to have been between 'me and my imaginary miſtreſs, ſince I had laſt ſeen 'Amelia; and related the particulars, as well as I could 'invent them, which had paſſed at our converſation.

'Poor Amelia preſently ſwallowed this bait; and, as 'ſhe hath told me ſince, abſolutely believed me to be in 'earneſt! Poor dear love! how ſhould the ſincereſt of 'hearts have any idea of deceit! For with all her ſimpli-'city, I aſſure you ſhe is the moſt ſenſible woman in the 'world.'.

'It is highly generous and good in you,' ſaid Miſs Matthews, with a ſly ſneer, 'to impute to honeſty what 'others would perhaps call credulity.'

'I proteſt, Madam,' anſwered he, 'I do her no more 'than juſtice. A good heart will at all times betray 'the beſt head in the world. Well, Madam, my angel 'was now, if poſſible, more confuſed than before, She 'looked ſo ſilly, you can hardly believe it.'

'Yes, yes, I can,' anſwered the lady, with a laugh, 'I can believe it. Well, go on.'---'After ſome heſita-'tion,' cried he, 'my Amelia ſaid faintly to me--- "Mr. Booth, you uſe me very ill; you deſire me to be "your confidante, and conceal from me the name of "your miſtreſs."

"Is it poſſible, then, Madam," anſwered I, "that "you cannot gueſs her, when I tell you ſhe is one of "your acquaintance, and lives in this town?"

"My acquaintance!" ſaid ſhe, "La! Mr. Booth.--- "In this town! I---I---I thought I could have gueſſed "for once: but I have an ill talent that way; I will "never attempt to gueſs any thing again." 'Indeed, I 'do her an injury when I pretend to repreſent her manner. 'Her manner, look, voice, every thing, was inimitable! 'Such ſweetneſs, ſoftneſs, innocence, modeſty! Upon 'my ſoul, if ever man could boaſt of his reſolution, I 'think I might now, that I abſtained from falling proſ-'trate at her feet, and adoring her! However, I tri-'umphed: pride, I believe, triumphed; or, perhaps, 'love got the better of love. We once more parted; 'and I promiſed, the next time I ſaw her, to reveal the 'name of my miſtreſs.

'I now had, I thought, gained a complete victory 'over myſelf; and no ſmall compliments did I pay to 'my own reſolution. In ſhort, I triumphed as cowards 'and niggards do when they flatter themſelves with 'having given ſome ſuppoſed inſtance of courage or 'generoſity: and my triumph laſted as long; that is to 'ſay, till my aſcendant paſſion had a proper opportu-'nity of diſplaying itſelf in its true and natural colours.

'Having hitherto ſucceeded ſo well in my own opi-'nion, and obtained this mighty ſelf-conqueſt; I now 'entertained a deſign of exerting the moſt romantic ge-

'neroſity,

'nerosity, and of curing that unhappy passion which I 'perceived I had raised in Amelia.

'Among the ladies who had expressed the greatest sa-'tisfaction at my Amelia's misfortune, Miss Osborne 'had distinguished herself in a very eminent degree; she 'was, indeed, the next in beauty to my angel; nay, she 'had disputed the preference, and had some among her 'admirers who were blind enough to give it in her 'favour.'

'Well,' cries the lady, 'I will allow you to call 'them blind; but Miss Osborne was a charming girl.'

'She certainly was handsome,' answered he, 'and a 'very considerable fortune; so I thought my Amelia 'would have little difficulty in believing me, when I 'fixed on her as my mistress. And I concluded, that 'my thus placing my affections on her known enemy, 'would be the surest method of eradicating every ten-'der idea with which I had been ever honoured by 'Amelia.

'Well, then, to Amelia I went: she received me with 'more than usual coldness and reserve; in which, to con-'fess the truth, there appeared to me more of anger than 'indifference, and more of dejection than of either. 'After some short introduction, I revived the discourse 'of my amour, and presently mentioned Miss Osborne 'as the lady whose name I had concealed; adding, 'that the true reason why I did not mention her before, 'was, that I apprehended there was some little distance 'between them, which I hoped to have the happiness 'of accommodating.

'Amelia answered, with much gravity---"If you "know, Sir, that there is any distance between us, I "suppose you know the reason of that distance; and "then, I think, I could not have expected to be affront-"ed by her name. I would not have you think, Mr. "Booth, that I hate Miss Osborne. No! Heaven is "my witness, I despise her too much. Indeed, when I "reflect how much I loved the woman who hath treated "me so cruelly, I own it gives me pain. When I lay,"

" as I then imagined, and as all about me believed,
" upon my death-bed, in all the agonies of pain and
" misery, to become the object of laughter to my dear-
" est friend! O Mr. Booth, it is a cruel reflection!
" And could I, after this, have expected from you---
" But why not from you, to whom I am a person en-
" tirely indifferent, if such a friend could treat me so
" barbarously?"

'During the greatest part of this speech, the tears 'streamed from her bright eyes. I could endure it no 'longer. I caught up the word indifferent, and re-'peated it, saying---" Do you think, then, Madam, " that Miss Emily is indifferent to me?"

" Yes, surely, I do," answered she; " I know I " am: indeed, why should I not be indifferent to " you?"

" Have my eyes," said I, " then declared nothing?"

" O there is no need of your eyes!" answered she. " Your tongue hath declared that you have singled out, " of all womankind, my greatest, I will say, my basest " enemy. I own, I once thought that character would " have been no recommendation to you---But why did " I think so? I was born to deceive myself."

'I then fell on my knees before her; and, forcing her 'hand, cried out---" O my Amelia! I can bear no " longer. You are the only mistress of my affections; " you are the deity I adore!" 'In this stile I ran on 'for two or three minutes, what it is impossible to re-'peat, till a torrent of contending passions, together 'with the surprize, overpowered her gentle spirits, and 'she fainted away in my arms.

'To describe my sensation till she returned to herself, 'is not in my power.'---'You need not,' cried Miss Matthews. 'Oh, happy Amelia! why had I not been 'blessed with such a passion?'---'I am convinced, Ma-'dam,' continued he, 'you cannot expect all the par-'ticulars of the tender scene which ensued. I was not 'enough in my senses to remember it all. Let it suffice 'to say, that that behaviour with which Amelia, while

'ignorant

'ignorant of it's motive, had been ſo much diſpleaſed, 'when ſhe became ſenſible of that motive, proved the 'ſtrongeſt recommendation to her favour; and ſhe was 'pleaſed to call it generous.'

'Generous!' repeated the lady; 'and ſo it was al-'moſt beyond the reach of humanity. I queſtion whe-'ther you ever had an equal.'

Perhaps the critical reader may have the ſame doubt with Miſs Matthews; and, leſt he ſhould, we will here make a gap in our hiſtory, to give him an opportunity of accurately conſidering whether this conduct of Mr. Booth was natural or no; and, conſequently, whether we have in this place maintained or deviated from that ſtrict adherence to univerſal truth which we profeſs above all other hiſtorians.

CHAP. III.

The Narrative continued. More of the Touchſtone.

BOOTH made a proper acknowledgment of Miſs Matthews's civility, and then renewed his ſtory.

'We were upon the footing of lovers; and Amelia 'threw off her reſerve more and more, till at length I 'found all that return of my affection which the tendereſt 'lover can require.

'My ſituation would now have been a paradiſe, had 'not my happineſs been interrupted with the ſame re-'flections I have already mentioned: had I not, in ſhort, 'concluded, that I muſt derive all my joys from the 'almoſt certain ruin of that dear creature to whom I 'ſhould owe them.

'This thought haunted me night and day; till I, at 'laſt, grew unable to ſupport it: I therefore reſolved, 'in the ſtrongeſt manner, to lay it before Amelia.

'One evening, then, after the higheſt profeſſions of 'the moſt diſintereſted love, in which Heaven knows my 'ſincerity, I took an occaſion to ſpeak to Amelia in the 'following manner---

"Too true it is, I am afraid, my deareſt creature, "that the higheſt human happineſs is imperfect! How "rich would be my cup, was it not for one poiſonous

" drop which embitters the whole!---O Amelia! what
" muſt be the conſequence of my ever having the ho-
" nour to call you mine!---You know my ſituation in
" life; and you know your own. I have nothing more
" than the poor proviſion of an enſign's commiſſion to
" depend on: your ſole dependance is on your mother.
" Should any act of diſobedience defeat your expecta-
" tions, how wretched muſt your lot be with me! O
" Amelia! how ghaſtly an object to my mind is the
" apprehenſion of your diſtreſs! Can I bear to reflect a
" moment on the certainty of your foregoing all the
" conveniences of life; on the poſſibility of your ſuffer-
" ing all its moſt dreadful inconveniences! What muſt
" be my miſery, then, to ſee you in ſuch a ſituation,
" and to upbraid myſelf with being the accurſed cauſe
" of bringing you to it! Suppoſe, too, in ſuch a ſeaſon, I
" ſhould be ſummoned from you; could I ſubmit to
" ſee you encounter all the hazards, the fatigues of
" war, with me! You could not yourſelf, however
" willing, ſupport them a ſingle campaign. What,
" then, muſt I leave you to ſtarve alone, deprived of the
" tenderneſs of a huſband! deprived, too, of the tender-
" neſs of the beſt of mothers, through my means; a
" woman moſt dear to me, for being the parent, the
" nurſe, and the friend, of my Amelia. But, O my
" ſweet creature! carry your thoughts a little farther.
" Think of the tendereſt conſequences, the deareſt pledges
" of our love! Can I bear to think of entailing beggary
" on the poſterity of my Amelia; on our---O Heavens!
" ---on our children?---On the other ſide, is it poſſible
" even to mention the word---I will not, muſt not, can-
" not, cannot part with you!---What muſt we do,
" Amelia? It is now I ſincerely aſk your advice?"

" What advice can I give you," ſaid ſhe, " in ſuch
" an alternative? Would to Heaven we had never
" met!"

' Theſe words were accompanied with a ſigh, and a
' look inexpreſſibly tender, the tears at the ſame time
' overflowing all her lovely cheeks. I was endeavour-

' ing

2 JY 58

J. De Wilde, del.

Engraved for C. Cooke, Paternoster Row, December 11. 1793.

W. Sharp, sc.

'ing to reply, when I was interrupted by what ſoon put 'an end to the ſcene.

'Our amour had already been buzzed all over the 'town; and it came at laſt to the ears of Mrs. Harris. 'I had, indeed, obſerved of late a great alteration in 'that lady's behaviour towards me, whenever I viſited 'at the houſe; nor could I for a long time, before this 'evening, ever obtain a private interview with Amelia; 'and now, it ſeems, I owed it to her mother's intention 'of overhearing all that paſſed between us.

'At the period, then, above-mentioned, Mrs. Harris 'burſt from the cloſet, where ſhe had hid herſelf, and 'ſurprized her daughter, reclining on my boſom, in all 'that tender ſorrow I have juſt deſcribed. I will not 'attempt to paint the rage of the mother, or the daugh-'ter's confuſion, or my own. "Here are very fine do-"ings, indeed!" cries Mrs. Harris. "You have "made a noble uſe, Amelia, of my indulgence, and "the truſt I repoſed in you!---As for you, Mr. Booth, "I will not accuſe you; you have uſed my child as I "ought to have expected: I may thank myſelf for what "hath happened!" 'with much more of the ſame kind, 'before ſhe would ſuffer me to ſpeak. But, at laſt, I 'obtained a hearing; and offered to excuſe my poor 'Amelia, who was ready to ſink into the earth under 'the oppreſſion of grief, by taking as much blame as I 'could on myſelf. Mrs. Harris anſwered---"No, Sir, "I muſt ſay you are innocent in compariſon of her: "nay, I can ſay, I have heard you uſe diſſuaſive argu-"ments; and I promiſe you they are of weight. I "have, I thank Heaven, one dutiful child; and I ſhall "henceforth think her my only one." 'She then forced 'the poor, trembling, fainting Amelia, out of the 'room; which when ſhe had done, ſhe began very coolly 'to reaſon with me on the folly, as well as iniquity, 'which I had been guilty of; and repeated to me al-'moſt every word I had before urged to her daughter. 'In fine, ſhe at laſt obtained of me a promiſe that I 'would ſoon go to my regiment, and ſubmit to any 'miſery, rather than that of being the ruin of Amelia.

'I now

'I now, for many days, endured the greateſt torments 'which the human mind is, I believe, capable of feel-'ing; and I can honeſtly ſay, I tried all the means, 'and applied every argument which I could raiſe, to 'cure me of my love: and, to make theſe the more ef-'fectual, I ſpent every night in walking backwards and 'forwards in ſight of Mrs. Harris's houſe; where I 'never failed to find ſome object or other which raiſed 'ſome tender idea of my lovely Amelia, and almoſt 'drove me to diſtraction.'

'And don't you think, Sir,' ſaid Miſs Matthews, 'you took a moſt prepoſterous method to cure your-'ſelf?'

'Alas! Madam,' anſwered he, 'you cannot ſee it 'in a more abſurd light than I do; but thoſe know 'little of real love or grief, who do not know how much 'we deceive ourſelves when we pretend to aim at the 'cure of either. It is with theſe, as it is with ſome 'diſtempers of the body, nothing is in the leaſt agree-'able to us but what ſerves to heighten the diſeaſe.

'At the end of a fortnight, when I was driven al-'moſt to the higheſt degree of deſpair, and could con-'trive no method of conveying a letter to Amelia, how 'was I ſurprized, when Mrs. Harris's ſervant brought 'me a card, with an invitation from the mother herſelf 'to drink tea that evening at her houſe!

'You will eaſily believe, Madam, that I did not fail 'ſo agreeable an appointment. On my arrival, I was 'introduced into a large company of men and women, 'Mrs. Harris and my Amelia being part of the com-'pany.

'Amelia ſeemed in my eyes to look more beautiful 'than ever, and behaved with all the gaiety imaginable. 'The old lady treated me with much civility; but the 'young lady took little notice of me, and addreſſed moſt 'of her diſcourſe to another gentleman preſent. Indeed, 'ſhe now and then gave me a look of no diſcouraging 'kind; and I obſerved her colour change more than 'once, when her eyes met mine: circumſtances which,

'perhaps

'perhaps, ought to have afforded me ſufficient comfort; 'but they could not allay the thouſand doubts and fears 'with which I was alarmed; for my anxious thoughts 'ſuggeſted no leſs to me, than that Amelia had made 'her peace with her mother at the price of abandoning 'me for ever, and of giving her ear to ſome other lover. 'All my prudence now vaniſhed at once; and I would 'that inſtant have gladly run away with Amelia, and 'have married her, without the leaſt conſideration of any 'conſequences.

'With ſuch thoughts I had tormented myſelf for 'near two hours, till moſt of the company had taken 'their leave. This I was myſelf incapable of doing: 'nor do I know when I ſhould have put an end to my 'viſit, had not Dr. Harriſon taken me away almoſt by 'force; telling me, in a whiſper, that he had ſome-'thing to ſay to me of great importance.---You know 'the doctor, Madam.'

'Very well, Sir,' anſwered Miſs Matthews; 'and 'one of the beſt men in the world he is, and an honour 'to the ſacred order to which he belongs.'

'You will judge,' replied Booth, 'by the ſequel, 'whether I have reaſon to think him ſo.' He then pro-'ceeded as in the next chapter.

CHAP. IV.

The Story of Mr. Booth continued. In this Chapter the Reader will perceive a Glimpſe of the Character of a very good Divine; with ſome Matters of a very tender kind.

'THE doctor conducted me into his ſtudy; and then 'deſiring me to ſit down, began, as near as I can 'remember, in theſe words, or at leaſt to this purpoſe---

"You cannot imagine, young gentleman, that your "love for Miſs Emily is any ſecret in this place; I have "known it ſome time; and have been, I aſſure you, "very much your enemy in this affair."

'I anſwered, that I was very much obliged to him.'

"Why, ſo you are," replied he; "and ſo perhaps "you will think yourſelf, when you know all. I went

"about

"about a fortnight ago to Mrs. Harris, to acquaint "her with my apprehenſions on her daughter's account; "for though the matter was much talked of, I thought "it might poſſibly not have reached her ears. I will "be very plain with you. I adviſed her to take all "poſſible care of the young lady, and even to ſend her "to ſome place where ſhe might be effectually kept out "of your reach while you remained in the town."

"And do you think, Sir," ſaid I, "that this was "acting a kind part by me? or do you expect that I "ſhould thank you on this occaſion?"

"Young man," anſwered he, "I did not intend you "any kindneſs; nor do I deſire any of your thanks. "My intention was to preſerve a worthy lady from a "young fellow of whom I had heard no good character, "and whom I imagined to have a deſign of ſtealing a "human creature for the ſake of her fortune."

"It was very kind of you, indeed," anſwered I, "to entertain ſuch an opinion of me."

"Why, Sir," replied the doctor, "it is the opinion "which, I believe, moſt of you young gentlemen of "the order of the rag deſerve. I have known ſome "inſtances, and have heard of more, where ſuch young "fellows have committed robbery under the name of "marriage."

'I was going to interrupt him with ſome anger, 'when he deſired me to have a little patience; and then 'informed me, that he had viſited Mrs. Harris, with 'the above-mentioned deſign, the evening after the 'diſcovery I have related; that Mrs. Harris, without 'waiting for his information, had recounted to him all 'which had happened the evening before: and, indeed, 'ſhe muſt have an excellent memory, for I think ſhe 'repeated every word I ſaid; and added, that ſhe had 'confined her daughter to her chamber, where ſhe kept 'her a cloſe priſoner, and had not ſeen her ſince.

'I cannot expreſs, nor would modeſty ſuffer me if I 'could, all that now paſſed. The doctor took me by 'the hand, and burſt forth into the warmeſt commenda-

'tions

'tions of the ſenſe and generoſity which he was pleaſed 'to ſay diſcovered themſelves in my ſpeech. You know, 'Madam, his ſtrong and ſingular way of expreſſing 'himſelf on all occaſions, eſpecially when he is affected 'with any thing. 'Sir," ſaid he, "if I knew half a "dozen ſuch inſtances in the army, the painter ſhould "put red liveries upon all the ſaints in my cloſet!"

'From this inſtant, the doctor told me, he had be-'come my friend and zealous advocate with Mrs. Har-'ris, on whom he had at laſt prevailed, though not 'without the greateſt difficulty, to conſent to my mar-'rying Amelia, upon condition that I ſettled every 'penny which the mother ſhould lay down; and that 'ſhe ſhould retain a certain ſum in her hands, which 'ſhe would at any time depoſit for my advancement in 'the army.

'You will, I hope, Madam, conceive that I made 'no heſitation at theſe conditions; nor need I mention 'the joy which I felt on this occaſion, or the acknow-'ledgment I paid the doctor; who is, indeed, as you 'ſay, one of the beſt of men.

'The next morning I had permiſſion to viſit Amelia, 'who received me in ſuch a manner, that I now con-'cluded my happineſs to be compleat.

'Every thing was now agreed on all ſides, and 'lawyers employed to prepare the writings; when an 'unexpected cloud aroſe ſuddenly in our ſerene ſky, and 'all our joys were obſcured in a moment.

'When matters were, as I apprehended, drawing 'near a concluſion, I received an expreſs that a ſiſter, 'whom I tenderly loved, was ſeized with a violent fe-'ver, and earneſtly deſired me to come to her. I im-'mediately obeyed the ſummons; and, as it was then 'about two in the morning, without ſtaying even to 'take leave of Amelia, for whom I left a ſhort billet, 'acquainting her with the reaſon of my abſence.

'The gentleman's houſe where my ſiſter then was 'ſtood at fifty miles diſtance; and, though I uſed the 'utmoſt expedition, the unmerciful diſtemper had, be-

'fore

'fore my arrival, entirely deprived the poor girl of her 'senſes, as it did ſoon after of her life.

'Not all the love I bore Amelia, nor the tumultuous 'delight with which the approaching hour of poſſeſſing 'her filled my heart, could for a while allay my grief 'at the loſs of my beloved Nancy. Upon my ſoul, I 'cannot yet mention her name without tears! Never 'brother and ſiſter had, I believe, a higher friendſhip 'for each other. Poor dear girl! whilſt I ſat by her 'in her light-headed fits, ſhe repeated ſcarce any other 'name but mine: and it plainly appeared that, when 'her dear reaſon was raviſhed away from her, it had left 'my image on her fancy, and that the laſt uſe ſhe had 'made of it was to think on me.---"Send for my dear "Billy immediately!" ſhe cried: "I know he will "come to me in a moment. Will nobody fetch him "to me? Pray, don't kill me before I ſee him once "more! You durſt not uſe me ſo if he was here!"--- 'Every accent ſtill rings in my ears---O Heavens! to 'hear this, and at the ſame time to ſee the poor deliri- 'ous creature deriving the greateſt horrors from my 'ſight, and miſtaking me for a highwayman who had 'a little before robbed her! But I aſk your pardon; the 'ſenſations I felt are to be known only from experience, 'and to you muſt appear dull and inſipid. At laſt, ſhe 'ſeemed for a moment to know me; and cried---"O "Heavens! my deareſt brother!" upon which ſhe fell 'into immediate convulſions, and died away in my 'arms.'

Here Booth ſtopped a moment, and wiped his eyes; and Miſs Matthews, perhaps out of complaiſance, wiped hers.

CHAP. V.

Containing ſtrange Revolutions of Fortune.

BOOTH proceeded thus---

'This loſs, perhaps, Madam, you will think, 'had made me miſerable enough; but Fortune did not 'think ſo: for on the day when my Nancy was to be 'buried, a courier arrived from Dr. Harriſon with a

'a letter

'letter, in which the doctor acquainted me that he was 'juſt come from Mrs. Harris when he diſpatched the 'expreſs; and earneſtly deſired me to return the very 'inſtant I received his letter, as I valued my Amelia. "Though, if the daughter," added he, "ſhould take "after her mother, (as moſt of them do) it will be, "perhaps, wiſer in you to ſtay away."

'I preſently ſent for the meſſenger into my room, and 'with difficulty extorted from him, that a great ſquire 'in his coach and ſix was come to Mrs. Harris's, and 'that the whole town ſaid he was ſhortly to be married 'to Amelia.

'I now ſoon perceived how much ſuperior my love 'for Amelia was to every other paſſion. Poor Nancy's 'idea diſappeared in a moment. I quitted the dear 'lifeleſs corpſe, over which I had ſhed a thouſand tears; 'left the care of the funeral to others; and poſted, I 'may almoſt ſay flew, back to Amelia, and alighted at 'the Doctor's houſe, as he had deſired me in his letter.

'The good man preſently acquainted me with what 'had happened in my abſence. Mr. Winckworth had, 'it ſeems, arrived the very day of my departure, with 'a grand equipage, and without delay made formal pro-'poſals to Mrs. Harris; offering to ſettle any part of his 'vaſt eſtate, in whatever manner ſhe pleaſed, on Amelia. 'Theſe propoſals the old lady had, without any delibe-'ration, accepted; and had inſiſted, in the moſt violent 'manner, on her daughter's compliance: which Ame-'lia had as peremptorily refuſed to give; inſiſting, on 'her part, on the conſent which her mother had before 'given to our marriage, in which ſhe was heartily ſe-'conded by the doctor; who declared to her, as he now 'did to me, that we ought as much to be eſteemed man 'and wife, as if the ceremony had already paſſed be-'tween us.

'Theſe remonſtrances, the doctor told me, had work-'ed no effect on Mrs. Harris, who ſtill perſiſted in her 'avowed reſolution of marrying her daughter to 'Winckworth, whom the doctor had likewiſe attacked;

'telling him, that he was paying his addreſſes to another 'man's wife: but all to no purpoſe; the young gentle-'man was too much in love to hearken to any diſſua-'ſives.

'We now entered into a conſultation what means to 'employ. The doctor earneſtly proteſted againſt any 'violence to be offered to the perſon of Winckworth; 'which, I believe, I had raſhly threatened; declaring, 'that if I made any attempt of that kind, he would 'for ever abandon my cauſe. I made him a ſolemn 'promiſe of forbearance. At laſt, he determined to 'pay another viſit to Mrs. Harris, and if he found her 'obdurate, he ſaid he thought himſelf at liberty to join 'us together without any farther conſent of the mother; 'which every parent, he ſaid, had a right to refuſe, but 'not retract when given, unleſs the party himſelf, by 'ſome conduct of his, gave a reaſon.

'The doctor having made his viſit with no better 'ſucceſs than before, the matter now debated was, how 'to get poſſeſſion of Amelia by ſtratagem; for ſhe was 'now a cloſer priſoner than ever, was her mother's bed-'fellow by night, and never out of her ſight by day.

'While we were deliberating on this point, a wine-'merchant of the town came to viſit the doctor, to in-'form him that he had juſt bottled off a hogſhead of ex-'cellent old Port, of which he offered to ſpare him a 'hamper; ſaying, that he was that day to ſend in twelve 'dozen to Mrs. Harris.

'The doctor now ſmiled at a conceit which came 'into his head; and taking me aſide, aſked me if I had 'love enough for the young lady to venture into the 'houſe in a hamper. I joyfully leaped at the propoſal, 'to which the merchant at the doctor's interceſſion, 'conſented: for I believe, Madam, you know the great 'authority which that worthy man had over the whole 'town. The doctor, moreover, promiſed to procure a 'licence, and to perform the office for us at his houſe, 'if I could find any means of conveying Amelia 'thither.

'In

'In this hamper, then, I was carried to the house, 'and depoſited in the entry; where I had not lain long 'before I was again removed, and packed up in a cart, 'in order to be ſent five miles into the country: for I 'heard the orders given as I lay in the entry; and there 'I likewiſe heard that Amelia and her mother were to 'follow me the next morning.

'I was unloaded from my cart, and ſet down, with 'the reſt of the lumber, in a great hall. Here I re- 'mained above three hours, impatiently waiting for the 'evening, when I had determined to quit a poſture 'which was become very uneaſy, and break my priſon; 'but fortune contrived to releaſe me ſooner, by the fol- 'lowing means. The houſe where I now was had been 'left in the care of one maid-ſervant. This faithful 'creature came into the hall with the footman who had 'driven the cart. A ſcene of the higheſt fondneſs ha- 'ving paſſed between them, the fellow propoſed, and 'the maid conſented, to open the hamper and drink a 'bottle together, which they agreed their miſtreſs would 'hardly miſs in ſuch a quantity. They preſently be- 'gan to execute their purpoſe. They opened the ham- 'per, and to their great ſurprize diſcovered the contents.

'I took an immediate advantage of the conſternation 'which appeared in the countenances of both the ſer- 'vants, and had ſufficient preſence of mind to improve 'the knowledge of thoſe ſecrets to which I was privy. 'I told them, that it entirely depended on their beha- 'viour to me whether their miſtreſs ſhould ever be ac- 'quainted, either with what they had done, or with what 'they had intended to do: for that if they would keep 'my ſecret, I would reciprocally keep theirs. I then 'acquainted them with my purpoſe of lying concealed 'in the houſe, in order to watch an opportunity of ob- 'taining a private interview with Amelia.

'In the ſituation in which theſe two delinquents 'ſtood, you may be aſſured it was not difficult for 'me to ſeal up their lips. In ſhort, they agreed to 'whatever I propoſed. I lay that evening in my dear

'Amelia's bed-chamber, and was in the morning conveyed into an old lumber-garret, where I was to wait 'till Amelia (whom the maid promiſed, on her arrival, 'to inform of my place of concealment) could find ſome 'opportunity of ſeeing me.'

'I aſk pardon for interrupting you,' cried MiſsMatthews, 'but you bring to my remembrance a fooliſh 'ſtory which I heard at that time, though at a great 'diſtance from you: that an officer had, in confederacy 'with Miſs Harris, broke open her mother's cellar, 'and ſtole away a great quantity of her wine. I mention it only to ſhew you what ſort of foundations moſt 'ſtories have.'

Booth told her he had heard ſome ſuch thing himſelf; and then continued his ſtory, as in the next chapter.

CHAP. VI.

Containing many ſurpriſing Adventures.

'HERE,' continued he, 'I remained the whole day 'in hopes of a happineſs, the expected approach 'of which gave me ſuch delight, that I would not have 'exchanged my poor lodgings for the fineſt palace in the 'univerſe.

'A little after it was dark, Mrs. Harris arrived, together with Amelia and her ſiſter. I cannot expreſs 'how much my heart now began to flutter; for as my 'hopes every moment increaſed, ſtrange fears which I 'had not felt before began now to intermingle with 'them.

'When I had continued full two hours in theſe circumſtances, I heard a woman's ſtep tripping up ſtairs, 'which I fondly hoped was my Amelia; but all on a 'ſudden the door flew open, and Mrs. Harris herſelf 'appeared at it, with a countenance pale as death, her 'whole body trembling, I ſuppoſe with anger. She 'fell upon me in the moſt bitter language. It is not 'neceſſary to repeat what ſhe ſaid; nor, indeed, can I, I 'was ſo ſhocked and confounded on this occaſion. 'In a word, the ſcene ended with my departing without 'ſeeing Amelia.'

'And

'And pray,' cries Miſs Matthews, how happened 'this unfortunate diſcovery?'

Booth anſwered, that---'The lady, at ſupper, or-'dered a bottle of wine, which neither myſelf,' ſaid he, 'nor the ſervants, had preſence of mind to provide. 'Being told there was none in the houſe, though ſhe had 'been before informed that the things came all ſafe, ſhe 'had ſent for the maid; who, being unable to deviſe 'any excuſe, had fallen on her knees, and after confeſ-'ſing her deſign of opening a bottle, which ſhe imputed 'to the fellow, betrayed poor me to her miſtreſs.

'Well, Madam, after a lecture of about a quarter of 'an hour's duration, from Mrs. Harris, I ſuffered her 'to conduct me to the outer gate of her court-yard, 'whence I ſet forward, in a diſconſolate condition of 'mind, towards my lodgings. I had five miles to walk 'in a dark and rainy night; but how can I mention 'theſe trifling circumſtances, as any aggravation of my 'diſappointment?'

'How was it poſſible,' cries Miſs Matthews, 'that 'you could be got out of the houſe without ſeeing Miſs 'Harris?'

'I aſſure you, Madam,' anſwered Booth, 'I have 'often wondered at it myſelf; but my ſpirits were ſo 'much ſunk at the ſight of her mother, that no man was 'was ever a greater coward than I was at that inſtant. 'Indeed, I believe my tender concern for the terrors of 'Amelia were the principal cauſe of my ſubmiſſion. 'However it was, I left the houſe, and walked about 'an hundred yards; when, at the corner of the garden 'wall, a female voice, in a whiſper, cried out---"Mr. "Booth!" The perſon was extremely near me, but it 'was ſo dark, I could ſcarce ſee her; nor did I, in the 'confuſion I was in, immediately recognize the voice. 'I anſwered in a line of Congreve's, which burſt from 'my lips ſpontaneouſly; for I am ſure I had no inten-'tion to quote plays at that time---

"Who calls that wretched thing that was Alphonſo?"

'Upon which a woman leapt into my arms, crying---"O, it is, indeed, my Alphonſo, my only Alphonſo!" 'O, Miſs Matthews! gueſs what I felt, when I found 'I had my Amelia in my arms! I embraced her with an 'extacy not to be deſcribed, at the ſame inſtant pouring a 'thouſand tenderneſſes into her ears; at leaſt, if I could 'expreſs ſo many to her in a minute; for in that time 'the alarm began at the houſe. Mrs. Harris had miſſed 'her daughter, and the court was preſently full of lights 'and noiſes of all kinds.

'I now lifted Amelia over a gate, and jumping after, 'we crept along together by the ſide of a hedge, a different way from what led to the town, as I imagined 'that would be the road through which they would purſue us. In this opinion I was right; for we heard 'them paſs along that road, and the voice of Mrs. 'Harris herſelf, who ran with the reſt, notwithſtanding 'the darkneſs and the rain. By theſe means we luckily 'made our eſcape; and clambering over hedge and 'ditch, my Amelia performing the part of a heroine all 'the way, we at length arrived at a little green lane, 'where ſtood a vaſt ſpreading oak, under which we ſheltered ourſelves from a violent ſtorm.

'When this was over, and the moon began to appear, Amelia declared ſhe knew very well where ſhe 'was; and a little farther, ſtriking into another lane, to 'the right, ſhe ſaid, that would lead us to a houſe where 'we ſhould be both ſafe and unſuſpected. I followed 'her directions, and we at length came to a little cottage, about three miles diſtant from Mrs. Harris's 'houſe.

'As it now rained very violently, we entered this 'cottage, in which we eſpied a light, without any ceremony. Here we found an elderly woman ſitting by 'herſelf, at a little fire; who had no ſooner viewed us, 'than ſhe inſtantly ſprung from her ſeat, and ſtarting 'back, gave the ſtrongeſt tokens of amazement: upon 'which Amelia ſaid---"Be not ſurprized, nurſe; though "you ſee me in a ſtrange pickle, I own." The old woman,

'after

'after having ſeveral times bleſſed herſelf, and expreſſed 'the moſt tender concern for the lady, who ſtood drip-'ping before her, began to beſtir herſelf in making 'up the fire; at the ſame entreating Amelia, that ſhe 'might be permitted to furniſh her with ſome cloaths, 'which, ſhe ſaid, though not fine, were clean and 'wholeſome, and much drier than her own. I ſeconded 'this motion ſo vehemently, that Amelia, though ſhe 'declared herſelf under no apprehenſion of catching cold, '(ſhe hath, indeed, the beſt conſtitution in the world) 'at laſt conſented, and I retired without doors, under a 'ſhed, to give my angel an opportunity of dreſſing her-'ſelf in the only room which the cottage afforded below 'ſtairs.

'At my return into the room, Amelia inſiſted on my 'changing my coat, for one which belonged to the old 'woman's ſon.'---'I am very glad,' cried Miſs Mat-thews, 'to find ſhe did not forget you. I own, I 'thought it ſomewhat cruel to turn you out into the 'rain.'---'O, Miſs Matthews,' continued he, taking no notice of her obſervation, 'I had now an opportunity 'of contemplating the vaſt power of exquiſite beauty, 'which nothing almoſt can add to or diminiſh. Amelia, 'in the poor rags of her old nurſe, looked ſcarce leſs 'beautiful than I have ſeen her appear at a ball, or an 'aſſembly.'---'Well, well,' cries Miſs Matthews, 'to 'be ſure ſhe did: but, pray go on with your ſtory.'

'The old woman,' continued he, 'after having 'equipped us as well as ſhe could, and placed our wet 'cloaths before the fire, began to grow inquiſitive; 'and after ſome ejaculations, ſhe cried---"O my dear "young madam, my mind miſgives me hugeouſly! And "pray, who is this fine young gentleman? Oh, Miſs "Emmy, Miſs Emmy, I am afraid Madam knows no-"thing of all this matter."---"Suppoſe he ſhould be "my huſband, nurſe," anſwered Amelia. "Oh, good! "and if he be," replies the nurſe, "I hope he is "ſome great gentleman or other, with a vaſt eſtate, and "a coach and ſix: for to be ſure, if an he was the

"greateſt

"greateſt lord in the land, you would deſerve it all."
'But why do I attempt to mimick the honeſt creature!
'In ſhort, ſhe diſcovered the greateſt affection for Ame-
'lia; with which I was much more delighted, than I
'was offended at the ſuſpicions ſhe ſhewed of me, or
'the many bitter curſes which ſhe denounced againſt
'me, if I ever proved a bad huſband to ſo ſweet a young
'lady.

'I ſo well improved the hint given me by Amelia,
'that the old woman had no doubt of our being really
'married; and comforting herſelf, that if I was not as
'well as it might have been, yet Madam had enough
'for us both, and that happineſs did not always depend
'on great riches, ſhe began to rail at the old lady for
'turning us out of doors, which I ſcarce told an untruth
'in aſſerting. And when Amelia ſaid, ſhe hoped her
'nurſe would not betray her, the good woman anſwered
'with much warmth---"Betray you, my dear young
"madam! No, that I would not, if the king would
"give me all that he is worth. No, not if Madam
"herſelf would give me the great houſe, and the whole
"farm belonging to it."

'The good woman then went out, and fetched a
'chicken from the rooſt, which ſhe killed, and began to
'pick, without aſking any queſtions. Then ſummon-
'ing her ſon, who was in bed, to her aſſiſtance, ſhe be-
'gan to prepare the chicken for our ſupper. This ſhe
'afterwards ſet before us in ſo neat, I may almoſt ſay
'elegant, a manner, that whoever would have diſdained
'it, either doth not know the ſenſation of hunger, or
'doth not deſerve to have it gratified. Our food was
'attended with ſome ale, which our kind hoſteſs ſaid ſhe
'intended not to have tapped till Chriſtmas: "But,"
'added ſhe, "I little thought ever to have the honour of
"ſeeing my dear honoured lady in this poor place."

'For my own part, no human being was then an ob-
'ject of envy to me; and even Amelia ſeemed to be in
'pretty good ſpirits; ſhe ſoftly whiſpered to me, that
'ſhe perceived there might be happineſs in a cottage.'

'A cot-

'A cottage!' cries Miſs Matthews, ſighing, 'a cot-
'tage, with a man one loves, is a palace.'

'When ſupper was ended,' continued Booth, 'the
'good woman began to think of our farther wants, and
'very earneſtly recommended her bed to us; ſaying, it
'was a very neat, though homely one, and that ſhe
'could furniſh us with a pair of clean ſheets. She added
'ſome perſuaſives which painted my angel all over with
'vermilion. As for myſelf, I behaved ſo aukwardly
'and fooliſhly, and ſo readily agreed to Amelia's reſo-
'lution of ſitting up all night, that if it did not give
'the nurſe any ſuſpicion of our marriage, it ought to
'have inſpired her with the utmoſt contempt for me.

'We both endeavoured to prevail with nurſe to re-
'tire to her own bed, but found it utterly impoſſible to
'ſucceed: ſhe thanked Heaven ſhe underſtood breeding
'better than that. And ſo well bred was the good
'woman, that we could ſcarce get her out of the room
'the whole night. Luckily for us, we both underſtood
'French; by means of which we conſulted together,
'even in her preſence, upon the meaſures we were to
'take in our preſent exigency. At length it was re-
'ſolved I ſhould ſend a letter by this young lad, whom
'I have juſt before mentioned, to our worthy friend the
'doctor, deſiring his company at our hut, ſince we
'thought it utterly unſafe to venture to the town, which
'we knew would be in an uproar on our account before
'the morning.'

Here Booth made a full ſtop, ſmiled, and then ſaid, he was going to mention ſo ridiculous a diſtreſs, that he could ſcarce think of it without laughing. What this was, the reader ſhall know in the next chapter.

CHAP. VII.

The Story of Booth continued. More ſurprizing Adventures.

'FROM what trifles, dear Miſs Matthews,' cried Booth, 'may ſome of our greateſt diſtreſſes
'ariſe! Do you not perceive I am going to tell you we
'had neither pen, ink, nor paper, in our preſent exi-
'gency? 'A ver-

'A verbal meſſage was now our only reſource: however, we contrived to deliver it in ſuch terms, that neither nurſe nor her ſon could poſſibly conceive any ſuſpicion from it of the preſent ſituation of our affairs. Indeed, Amelia whiſpered me, I might ſafely place any degree of confidence in the lad; for he had been her foſter-brother, and ſhe had a great opinion of his integrity. He was in truth a boy of very good natural parts; and Dr. Harriſon, who had received him into his family at Amelia's recommendation, had bred him up to write and read very well, and had taken ſome pains to infuſe into him the principles of honeſty and religion. He was not, indeed, even now diſcharged from the doctor's ſervice; but had been at home with his mother for ſome time, on account of the ſmall-pox, from which he was lately recovered.

'I have ſaid ſo much,' continued Booth, 'of the boy's character, that you may not be ſurprized at ſome ſtories which I ſhall tell you of him hereafter.

'I am going now, Madam, to relate to you one of thoſe ſtrange accidents, which are produced by ſuch a train of circumſtances, that mere chance hath been thought incapable of bringing them together; and which have therefore given birth, in ſuperſtitious minds, to Fortune, and to ſeveral other imaginary beings.

'We were now impatiently expecting the arrival of the doctor: our meſſenger had been gone much more than a ſufficient time; which to us, you may be aſſured, appeared not at all ſhorter than it was; when nurſe, who had gone out of doors on ſome errand, came running haſtily to us, crying out---"O my dear "young Madam, her ladyſhip's coach is juſt at the "door!" Amelia turned pale as death at theſe words: indeed, I feared ſhe would have fainted, if I could be ſaid to fear, who had ſcarce any of my ſenſes left, and was in a condition little better than my angel's.

'While we were both in this dreadful ſituation, Amelia fallen back in her chair, with the countenance in which ghoſts are painted, myſelf at her feet

'with

'with a complexion of no very different colour, and 'nurſe ſcreaming out, and throwing water in Amelia's 'face, Mrs. Harris entered the room. At the ſight of 'this ſcene, ſhe threw herſelf likewiſe into a chair, and 'called immediately for a glaſs of water, which Miſs 'Betty, her daughter, ſupplied her with: for, as to 'nurſe, nothing was capable of making any impreſſion 'on her, whilſt ſhe apprehended her young miſtreſs to 'be in danger.

'The doctor had now entered the room; and coming 'immediately up to Amelia, after ſome expreſſions of 'ſurprize, he took her by the hand, called her his little 'ſugar-plum, and aſſured her there were none but 'friends preſent. He then led her tottering acroſs the 'room to Mrs. Harris. Amelia then fell upon her 'knees before her mother; but the doctor caught her 'up, ſaying---"Uſe that poſture, child, only to the "Almighty." But I need not mention this ſingularity 'of his to you, who know him ſo well, and muſt have 'heard him often diſpute againſt addreſſing ourſelves to 'man in the humbleſt poſture which we uſe towards the 'Supreme Being.

'I will tire you with no more particulars: we were 'ſoon ſatisfied that the doctor had reconciled us and our 'affairs to Mrs. Harris; and we now proceeded directly 'to church, the doctor having before provided a licence 'for us.'

'But where is the ſtrange accident?' cried Miſs Mat-thews. 'Sure you raiſed more curioſity than you have 'have ſatisfied.'

'Indeed, Madam,' anſwered he, 'your reproof is 'juſt; I had like to have forgotten it: but you cannot 'wonder at me, when you reflect on that intereſting part 'of my ſtory which I am now relating. But before I 'mention this accident, I muſt tell you what happened 'after Amelia's eſcape from her mother's houſe. Mrs. 'Harris at firſt ran out into the lane among her ſervants, 'and purſued us (ſo ſhe imagined) along the road lead-'ing to the town; but that being very dirty, and a vio-

'lent

'lent ſtorm of rain coming, ſhe took ſhelter in an ale-'houſe about half a mile from her own houſe, whither 'ſhe ſent for her coach: ſhe then drove, together with 'her daughter, to town, where, ſoon after her arrival, 'ſhe ſent for the doctor, her uſual privy-counſellor in all 'her affairs. They ſat up all night together, the doc-'tor endeavouring, by arguments and perſuaſions, to 'bring Mrs. Harris to reaſon; but all to no purpoſe, 'though, as he hath informed me, Miſs Betty ſeconded 'him with the warmeſt entreaties.'

Here Miſs Matthews laughed; of which Booth beg-ged to know the reaſon: ſhe, at laſt, after many apo-logies, ſaid, it was the firſt good thing ſhe ever heard of Miſs Betty. 'Nay,' ſaid ſhe, 'and aſking your par-'don for my opinion of your ſiſter, ſince you will have 'it, I always conceived her to be the deepeſt of hypo-'crites.'

Booth fetched a ſigh, and ſaid, he was afraid ſhe had not always acted ſo kindly!---and then, after a little he-ſitation, proceeded.

'You will be pleaſed, Madam, to remember, the lad 'was ſent with a verbal meſſage to the doctor; which 'meſſage was no more than to acquaint him where we 'were, and to deſire the favour of his company, or that 'he would ſend a coach to bring us to whatever place he 'would pleaſe to meet us at. This meſſage was to be 'delivered to the doctor himſelf; and the meſſenger was 'ordered, if he found him not at home, to go to him 'wherever he was. He fulfilled his orders, and told it 'to the doctor in the preſence of Mrs. Harris.'

'Oh! the idiot!' cries Miſs Matthews. 'Not at 'all,' anſwered Booth: 'he is a very ſenſible fellow, as 'you will perhaps ſay hereafter. He had not the leaſt 'reaſon to ſuſpect that any ſecreſy was neceſſary, for we 'took the utmoſt care he ſhould not ſuſpect it. Well, 'Madam, this accident, which appeared ſo unfortu-'nate, turned in the higheſt degree to our advantage. 'Mrs. Harris no ſooner heard the meſſage delivered, than 'ſhe fell into the moſt violent paſſion imaginable, and

'accuſed

'accuſed the doctor of being in the plot, and having 'confederated with me in the deſign of carrying off her 'daughter.

'The doctor, who had hitherto uſed only ſoothing me-'thods, now talked in a different ſtrain. He confeſſed 'the accuſation, and juſtified his conduct. He ſaid he 'was no meddler in the family affairs of others, nor ſhould 'he have concerned himſelf with hers, but at her own 'requeſt; but that ſince Mrs. Harris herſelf had made 'him an agent in this matter, he would take care to ac-'quit himſelf with honour, and above all things to pre-'ſerve a young lady for whom he had the higheſt eſteem: "For ſhe is," cries he, (and by Heavens he ſaid true!) "the moſt worthy, generous, and noble, of all human "beings. You have yourſelf, Madam," ſaid he, "con-"ſented to the match. I have, at your requeſt, made "the match;-----and then he added ſome particu-'lars relating to his opinion of me, which my modeſty 'forbids me to repeat.'---'Nay, but,' cries Miſs Mat-thews, 'I inſiſt on your conqueſt of that modeſty for 'once. We women do not love to hear one another's 'praiſes, and I will be made amends by hearing the 'praiſes of a man, and of a man whom, perhaps,' added ſhe with a leer, 'I ſhall not think much the better of up-'on that account.'---'In obedience to your commands, 'then, Madam,' continued he, the doctor was ſo kind as 'to ſay, he had enquired into my character, and had 'found that I had been a dutiful ſon, and an affectionate 'brother. "Relations," ſaid he, "in which, whoever "diſcharges his duty well, gives a well-grounded hope, "that he will behave as properly in all the reſt." He 'concluded with ſaying, that Amelia's happineſs, her 'heart, nay, her very reputation, were all concerned in 'this matter; to which, as he had been made inſtru-'mental, he was reſolved to carry her through it: and 'then taking the licence from his pocket, declared to 'Mrs. Harris, that he would go that inſtant, and 'marry her daughter wherever he found her. This 'ſpeech, the doctor's voice, his look, and his beha-

'viour, all which are ſufficiently calculated to inſpire 'awe, and even terror, when he pleaſes, frightened poor 'Mrs. Harris, and wrought a more ſenſible effect than 'it was in his power to produce by all his arguments 'and entreaties: and I have already related what fol-'lowed.

'Thus the ſtrange accident of our wanting pen, ink, 'and paper, and our not truſting the boy with our ſe-'cret, occaſioned the diſcovery to Mrs. Harris. That 'diſcovery put the doctor upon his mettle, and produced 'that bleſſed event which I have recounted to you, and 'which, as my mother hath ſince confeſſed, nothing but 'the ſpirit which he had exerted after the diſcovery, 'could have brought about.

'Well, Madam, you now ſee me married to Amelia; 'in which ſituation you will, perhaps, think my happi-'neſs incapable of addition. Perhaps it was ſo; and 'yet I can with truth ſay, that the love which I then 'bore Amelia was not comparable to what I bear her 'now.'---'Happy Amelia!' cried Miſs Matthews. 'If all men were like you, all women would be bleſſed: 'nay, the whole world would be ſo in a great meaſure; 'for, upon my ſoul, I believe, that from the damned 'inconſtancy of your ſex to ours proceed half the miſe-'ries of mankind.'

That we may give the reader leiſure to conſider well the foregoing ſentiment, we will here put an end to this chapter.

CHAP. VIII.

In which our Readers will probably be divided in their Opinion of Mr. Booth's Conduct.

BOOTH proceeded as follows---'The firſt months of 'our marriage produced nothing remarkable enough 'to mention. I am ſure, I need not tell Miſs Mat-'thews, that I found in my Amelia every perfection of 'human nature. Mrs. Harris at firſt gave us ſome lit-'tle uneaſineſs. She had rather yielded to the doctor, 'than given a willing conſent to the match; however, 'by degrees ſhe became more and more ſatisfied, and at

'laſt

'laſt ſeemed perfectly reconciled. This we aſcribed a 'good deal to the kind offices of Miſs Betty, who had 'always appeared to be my friend. She had been 'greatly aſſiſting to Amelia in making her eſcape, which 'I had no opportunity of mentioning to you before; 'and in all things behaved ſo well, outwardly at leaſt, 'to myſelf as well as her ſiſter, that we regarded her as 'our ſincereſt friend.

'About half a year after our marriage, two addi-'tional companies were added to our regiment, in one 'of which I was preferred to the command of a lieute-'nant. Upon this occaſion, Miſs Betty gave the firſt 'intimation of a diſpoſition which we have ſince too ſe-'verely experienced.'

'Your ſervant, Sir,' ſays Miſs Matthews; 'then I 'find I was not miſtaken in my opinion of the lady. 'No; no; ſhew me any goodneſs in a cenſorious prude, 'and---'

As Miſs Matthews heſitated for a ſimile, or an exe-cration, Booth proceeded---'You will pleaſe to remem-'ber, Madam, there was formerly an agreement be-'tween myſelf and Mrs. Harris, that I ſhould ſettle all 'my Amelia's fortune on her, except a certain ſum, 'which was to be laid out in my advancement in the 'army; but as our marriage was carried on in the 'manner you have heard, no ſuch agreement was ever 'executed. And ſince I was become Amelia's huſ-'band, not a word of the matter was ever mentioned by 'the old lady; and, as for myſelf, I declare I had not 'yet awakened from that delicious dream of bliſs in 'which the poſſeſſion of Amelia had lulled me.'

Here Miſs Matthews ſighed, and caſt the tendereſt looks on Booth, who thus continued his ſtory.

'Soon after my promotion, Mrs. Harris one morn-'ing took an occaſion to ſpeak to me on this affair. She 'ſaid, that as I had been promoted gratis to a lieute-'nancy, ſhe would aſſiſt me with money to carry me 'yet a ſtep higher: and if more was required than was 'formerly mentioned, it ſhould not be wanting, ſince

'ſhe was ſo perfectly ſatisfied with my behaviour to her 'daughter. Adding, that ſhe hoped I had ſtill the 'ſame inclination to ſettle on my wife the remainder of 'her fortune.

'I anſwered with very warm acknowledgments of 'my mother's goodneſs; and declared, if I had the 'world, I was ready to lay it at my Amelia's feet. 'And ſo, Heaven knows, I would ten thouſand worlds.

'Mrs. Harris ſeemed pleaſed with the warmth of my 'ſentiments, and ſaid, ſhe would immediately ſend to 'her lawyer, and give him the neceſſary orders; and 'thus ended our converſation on this ſubject.

'From this time there was a very viſible altera-'tion in Miſs Betty's behaviour. She grew reſerved 'to her ſiſter as well as to me. She was fretful and 'captious on the ſlighteſt occaſion: nay, ſhe affected 'much to talk on the ill conſequences of an imprudent 'marriage, eſpecially before her mother; and if ever 'any little tenderneſs or endearments eſcaped me in pub-'lic towards Amelia, ſhe never failed to make ſome 'malicious remark on the ſhort duration of violent paſ-'ſions; and when I have expreſſed a fond ſentiment for 'my wife, her ſiſter would kindly wiſh ſhe might hear 'as much ſeven years hence.

'All theſe matters have been ſince ſuggeſted to us by 'reflection: for while they actually paſſed, both Amelia 'and myſelf had our thoughts too happily engaged to 'take notice of what diſcovered itſelf in the mind of 'any other perſon.

'Unfortunately for us, Mrs. Harris's lawyer hap-'pened at this time to be at London, where buſineſs 'detained him upwards of a month; and as Mrs. 'Harris would on no occaſion employ any other, our 'affair was under an entire ſuſpenſion till his return.

'Amelia, who was now big with child, had often 'expreſſed the deepeſt concern at her apprehenſions of 'my being ſome time commanded abroad; a circum-'ſtance which, ſhe declared, if it ſhould ever happen to 'her, even though ſhe ſhould not then be in the ſame ſi-

'tuation

'tuation as at preſent, would infallibly break her heart. 'Theſe remonſtrances were made with ſuch tenderneſs, 'and ſo much affected me, that to avoid any probabi- 'lity of ſuch an event, I endeavoured to get an ex- 'change into the horſe-guards, a body of troops which 'very rarely goes abroad, unleſs where the king himſelf 'commands in perſon. I ſoon found an officer for my 'purpoſe; the terms were agreed on, and Mrs. Har- 'ris had ordered the money which I was to pay to be 'ready, notwithſtanding the oppoſition made by Miſs 'Betty, who openly diſſuaded her mother from it; al- 'ledging that the exchange was highly to my diſadvan- 'tage; that I could never hope to riſe in the army af- 'ter it; not forgetting, at the ſame time, ſome inſi- 'nuations very prejudicial to my reputation as a ſol- 'dier.

'When every thing was agreed on, and the two 'commiſſions were actually made out, but not ſigned 'by the king; one day, at my return from hunting, 'Amelia flew to me, and eagerly embracing me, cried 'out---"O Billy, I have news for you, which delights "my ſoul. Nothing ſure was ever ſo fortunate as the "exchange you have made. The regiment you was "formerly in is ordered for Gibraltar."

'I received this news with far leſs tranſport than it 'was delivered. I anſwered coldly, ſince the caſe was 'ſo, I heartily hoped the commiſſions might be both 'ſigned. "What do you ſay!" replied Amelia ea- 'gerly; "ſure you told me every thing was entirely "ſettled. That look of yours frightens me to death." 'But I am running into too minute particulars. In 'ſhort, I received a letter by that very poſt, from the 'officer with whom I had exchanged, inſiſting, that 'though his majeſty had not ſigned the commiſſions, 'that ſtill the bargain was valid, partly urging it as a 'right, and partly deſiring it as a favour, that he 'might go to Gibraltar in my room.

'This letter convinced me in every point. I was 'now informed that the commiſſions were not ſigned,

'and consequently that the exchange was not compleated. Of consequence the other could have no 'right to insist on going; and as for granting him such 'a favour, I too clearly saw I must do it at the expence 'of my honour. I was now reduced to a dilemma, the 'most dreadful which I think any man can experience, 'in which I am not ashamed to own, I found Love was 'not so over-matched by Honour as he ought to have 'been. The thoughts of leaving Amelia, in her pre-'sent condition, to misery, perhaps to death or mad-'ness, were insupportable; nor could any other consi-'deration but that which now tormented me on the 'other side, have combated them a moment.'

'No woman upon earth,' cries Miss Matthews, 'can 'despise want of spirit in a man more than myself; and 'yet I cannot help thinking you was rather too nice on 'this occasion.'

'You will allow, Madam,' answered Booth, 'that 'whoever offends against the laws of honour in the least 'instance is treated as the highest delinquent. Here is 'no excuse, no pardon; and he doth nothing who 'leaves any thing undone. But if the conflict was so 'terrible with myself alone, what was my situation in 'the presence of Amelia! how could I support her 'sighs, her tears, her agonies, her despair? Could I 'bear to think myself the cruel cause of her sufferings, 'for so I was! Could I endure the thought of having 'it in my power to give her instant relief, for so it 'was, and refuse it her!

'Miss Betty was now again become my friend. She 'had scarce been civil to me for a fortnight last past, yet 'now she commended me to the skies, and as severely 'blamed her sister, whom she arraigned of the most 'contemptible weakness, in preferring my safety to 'my honour; she said many ill-natured things on the 'occasion, which I shall not now repeat.

'In the midst of this hurricane, the good doctor 'came to dine with Mrs. Harris, and at my desire de-'livered his opinion on the matter.'

Here

Here Mr. Booth was interrupted in his narrative by the arrival of a perſon whom we ſhall introduce in the next chapter.

CHAP. IX.

Containing a Scene of a different Kind from any of the preceding.

THE gentleman who now arrived was the keeper; or, if you pleaſe, (for ſo he pleaſed to call himſelf) the governor of the priſon.

He uſed ſo little ceremony at his approach, that the bolt, which was very ſlight on the inſide, gave way, and the door immediately flew open. He had no ſooner entered the room than he acquainted Miſs Matthews that he had brought her very good news, for which he demanded a bottle of wine as his due.

This demand being complied with, he acquainted Miſs Matthews that the wounded gentleman was not dead, nor was his wound thought to be mortal: that loſs of blood, and perhaps his fright, had occaſioned his fainting away: 'But I believe, Madam,' ſaid he, 'if you take the proper meaſures, you may be bailed 'to-morrow: I expect the lawyer here this evening, 'and if you put the buſineſs into his hands, I warrant 'it will be done. Money to be ſure muſt be parted 'with, that is to be ſure. People to be ſure will ex-'pect to touch a little in ſuch caſes. For my own 'part, I never deſire to keep a priſoner longer than 'the law allows, not I; I always inform them they 'can be bailed as ſoon as I know it. I never make any 'bargain, not I; I always love to leave thoſe things 'to the gentlemen and ladies themſelves. I never ſuſ-'pect gentlemen and ladies of wanting generoſity.'

Miſs Matthews made a very ſlight anſwer to all theſe friendly profeſſions. She ſaid, ſhe had done nothing ſhe repented of, and was indifferent as to the event. 'All I can ſay,' cries ſhe, 'is, that if the wretch is 'alive, there is no greater villain in life than himſelf.' And inſtead of mentioning any thing of the bail, ſhe begged the keeper to leave her again alone with Mr. Booth.

Booth. The keeper replied, 'Nay, Madam, perhaps 'it may be better to ſtay a little longer here, if you 'have not bail ready, than to buy them too dear. Be-'ſides, a day or two hence, when the gentleman is paſt 'all danger of recovery, to be ſure ſome folks who 'would expect an extraordinary fee now, cannot ex-'pect to touch any thing. And to be ſure you ſhall 'want nothing here. The beſt of all things are to be 'had here for money, both eatable and drinkable; 'though I ſay it, I ſhan't turn my back to any of the 'taverns for either eatables or *wind*. The captain 'there need not have been ſo ſhy of owning himſelf 'when he firſt came in; we have had captains and 'other great gentlemen here before now; and no ſhame 'to them, though I ſay it. Many a great gentleman 'is ſometimes found in places that don't become them 'half ſo well; let me tell them that, Captain Booth, 'let me tell them that!'

'I ſee, Sir,' anſwered Booth, a little diſcompoſed, that you are acquainted with my title as well as my 'name.'

'Aye, Sir,' cries the keeper, 'and I honour you 'the more for it. I love the gentlemen of the army. 'I was in the army myſelf formerly; in the Lord of 'Oxford's horſe. It is true I rode private; but I had 'money enough to have bought in quarter-maſter, when 'I took it into my head to marry; and my wife ſhe 'did not like that I ſhould continue a ſoldier, ſhe was 'all for a private life; and ſo I came to this buſineſs.'

'Upon my word, Sir,' anſwered Booth, 'you con-'ſulted your wife's inclinations very notably; but 'pray, will you ſatisfy my curioſity in telling me how 'you became acquainted that I was in the army? for 'my dreſs, I think, could not betray me.'

'Betray!' replied the keeper, 'there is no betray-'ing here, I hope; I am not a perſon to betray peo-'ple. But you are ſo ſhy and peery, you would al-'moſt make one ſuſpect there was more in the matter. 'And if there be, I promiſe you, you need not be afraid

'of

'of telling it me. You will excuſe my giving you a 'hint; but the ſooner the better, that's all. Others 'may be beforehand with you, and firſt come firſt 'ſerved on theſe occaſions, that's all. Informers are 'odious, there is no doubt of that, and that no one 'would care to be an informer if he could help it, be-'cauſe of the ill uſage they always receive from the 'mob: yet it is dangerous to truſt too much; and 'when ſafety and a good part of the reward too are on 'one ſide, and the gallows on the other, I know which 'a wiſe man would chuſe.'

'What the devil do you mean by all this?' cried Booth.

'No offence, I hope,' anſwered the keeper; 'I 'ſpeak for your good; and if you have been upon the 'ſnaffling lay---you underſtand me, I am ſure.'

'Not I,' anſwered Booth; 'upon my honour.'

'Nay, nay,' replied the keeper, with a contemptuous ſneer, 'if you are ſo peery as that comes to, you 'muſt take the conſequence. But for my part, I 'know I would not truſt Robinſon with two-pence un-'told.'

'What do you mean?' cries Booth? 'Who is Robinſon?'

'And you don't know Robinſon!' anſwered the keeper with great emotion. To which Booth replying in the negative; the keeper, after ſome tokens of amazement, cried out, 'Well, captain, I muſt ſay, you are 'the beſt at it, of all the gentlemen I ever ſaw. How-'ever, I will tell you this: the lawyer and Mr. Robin-'ſon have been laying their heads together about you 'above half an hour this afternoon. I overheard them 'mention Captain Booth ſeveral times; and for my 'part I would not anſwer that Mr. Murphy is not now 'gone about the buſineſs; but if you will impeach any 'to me of the road, or any thing elſe, I will ſtep away 'to his Worſhip Thraſher this inſtant, and I am ſure 'I have intereſt enough with him to get you admitted 'an evidence.'

'And

'And so,' cries Booth, 'you really take me for an 'highwayman?'

'No offence, captain, I hope,' said the keeper: 'as times go, there are many worse men in the world 'than those. Gentlemen may be driven to distress; 'and when they are, I know no more genteeler way 'than the road. It hath been many a brave man's 'case, to my knowledge, and men of as much honour 'too as any in the world.'

'Well, Sir,' said Booth, 'I assure you I am not 'that gentleman of honour you imagine me.'

Miss Matthews, who had long understood the keeper no better than Mr. Booth, no sooner heard his meaning explained, than she was fired with greater indignation than the gentleman had expressed. 'How dare you, 'Sir,' said she to the keeper, 'insult a man of fashion, and 'who hath had the honour to bear his majesty's com-'mission in the army, as you yourself own you know? 'If his misfortunes have sent him hither, sure we have 'no laws that will protect such a fellow as you in in-'sulting him?'---'Fellow!' muttered the keeper: 'I 'would not advise you, Madam, to use such language 'to me.'---'Do you dare threaten me!' replied Miss Matthews in a rage: 'venture in the least instance to 'exceed your authority, with regard to me, and I will 'prosecute you with the utmost vengeance.'

A scene of very high altercation now ensued, till Booth interposed, and quieted the keeper, who was, perhaps, enough inclined to an accommodation; for, in truth, he waged unequal war. He was, besides, unwilling to incense Miss Matthews, whom he expected to be bailed out the next day, and who had more money left than he intended she should carry out of the prison with her; and as for any violent or unjustifiable methods, the lady had discovered much too great a spirit to be in danger of them. The governor, therefore, in a very gentle tone, declared, that if he had given any offence to the gentleman, he heartily asked his pardon; that if he had known him to be really a captain, he should not

have

have entertained any ſuch ſuſpicions; but that captain was a very common title in that place, and belonged to ſeveral gentlemen that had never been in the army, or at moſt had rid private like himſelf. 'To be ſure, captain,' ſaid he, 'as you yourſelf own, your dreſs is not 'very military;' (for he had on a plain fuſtian ſuit) 'and beſides, as the lawyer ſays, *noſcitur a ſoſir* is a very 'good rule. And I don't believe there is a greater 'raſcal upon earth than that ſame Robinſon that I was 'talking of. Nay, I aſſure you, I wiſh there may be 'no miſchief hatching againſt you. But if there is, I 'will do all I can with the lawyer to prevent it. To 'be ſure Mr. Murphy is one of the cleverest men in the 'world at the law, that even his enemies muſt own; 'and as I recommend him to all the buſineſs I can, '(and it is not a little, to be ſure, that ariſes in this 'place) why one good turn deſerves another. And I 'may expect that he will not be concerned in any plot 'to ruin any friend of mine; at leaſt, when I deſire 'him not. I am ſure he could not be an honeſt man if 'he would.'

Booth was then ſatisfied that Mr. Robinſon, whom he did not yet know by name, was the gameſter who had won his money at play. And now Miſs Matthews, who had very impatiently borne this long interruption, prevailed on the keeper to withdraw. As ſoon as he was gone, Mr. Booth began to felicitate her upon the news of the wounded gentleman being in a fair likelihood of recovery. To which, after a ſhort ſilence, ſhe anſwered, 'There is ſomething, perhaps, 'which you will not eaſily gueſs, that makes your 'congratulations more agreeable to me than the firſt 'account I heard of the villain's having eſcaped the 'fate he deſerves: for I do aſſure you, at firſt, it did 'not make me amends for the interruption of my curi-'oſity. Now, I hope, we ſhall be diſturbed no more, 'till you have finiſhed your whole ſtory.---You left 'off, I think, ſomewhere in the ſtruggle about leaving 'Amelia, the happy Amelia.'---'And can you call

'her

'her happy at such a period?' cries Booth. 'Happy! 'aye, happy in any situation,' answered Miss Matthews, 'with such a husband. I, at least, may 'well think so, who have experienced the very reverse 'of her fortune; but I was not born to be happy. I 'may say with the poet---

"The blackest ink of fate was sure my lot,
"And when fate writ my name, it made a blot."

'Nay, nay, dear Miss Matthews,' answered Booth, 'you must and shall banish such gloomy thoughts. 'Fate hath, I hope, many happy days in store for you.' ---'Do you believe it, Mr. Booth?' replied she; 'indeed you know the contrary---you must know---for 'you can't have forgot. No Amelia in the world can 'have quite obliterated---forgetfulness is not in our 'own power: if it was, indeed, I have reason to 'think---But I know not what I am saying. Pray, 'do proceed in that story.'

Booth so immediately complied with this request, that it is possible he was pleased with it. To say the truth, if all which unwittingly dropt from Miss Matthews was put together, some conclusions might, it seems, be drawn from the whole, which could not convey a very agreeable idea to a constant husband. Booth therefore proceeded to relate what is written in the third book of this history.

BOOK III.

CHAP. I.

In which Mr. Booth resumes his Story.

'IF I am not mistaken, Madam,' continued Booth, 'I was just going to acquaint you with the doc-'tor's opinion, when we were interrupted by the 'keeper.

'The doctor having heard counsel on both sides, 'that is to say, Mrs. Harris for my staying, and Miss 'Betty for my going, at last delivered his own senti-

'ments.

'ments. As for Amelia, she sat silent, drowned in 'her tears; nor was I myself in a much better 'situation.

"As the commissions are not signed," said the doc-'tor, "I think you may be said to remain in your "former regiment; and therefore I think you ought "to go on this expedition: your duty to your king "and country, whose bread you have eaten, requires "it; and this is a duty of too high a nature to admit "the least deficiency. Regard to your character like-"wise requires you to go; for the world, which might "justly blame your staying at home, if the case was "even fairly stated, will not deal so honestly by you: "you must expect to have every circumstance against "you heightened, and most of what makes for your "defence omitted; and thus you will be stigmatized as "a coward, without any palliation. As the malicious "disposition of mankind is too well known, and the "cruel pleasure which they take in destroying the re-"putations of others; the use we are to make of this "knowledge is to afford no handle to reproach; for, "bad as the world is, it seldom falls on any man who "hath not given some slight cause for censure, though "this, perhaps, is often aggravated ten thousand fold; "and when we blame the malice of the aggravation, "we ought not to forget our own imprudence in giv-"ing the occasion. Remember, my boy, your ho-"nour is at stake; and you know how nice the honour "of a soldier is in these cases. This is a treasure, "which he must be your enemy indeed who would at-"tempt to rob you of. Therefore you ought to con-"sider every one as your enemy, who, by desiring you "to stay, would rob you of your honour."

"Do you hear that, sister?" cries Miss Betty. "Yes, I do hear it," answered Amelia, with more 'spirit than I ever saw her exert before, "and would "preserve his honour at the expence of my life. I "will preserve it, if it should be at that expence; and "since it is Dr. Harrison's opinion that he ought to

"go, I give my conſent:---Go, my dear huſband!" 'cried ſhe, falling upon her knees; "may every an-"gel of Heaven guard and preſerve you!"---I cannot 'repeat her words without being affected,' ſaid he, wiping his eyes; 'the excellence of that woman no 'words can paint: Miſs Matthews, ſhe hath every 'perfection in human nature.

'I will not tire you with the repetition of any more 'that paſſed on that occaſion; nor with the quarrel 'that enſued between Mrs. Harris and the doctor; for 'the old lady could not ſubmit to my leaving her 'daughter in her preſent condition. She fell ſeverely 'on the army, and curſed the day in which her daugh-'ter was married to a ſoldier, not ſparing the doctor 'for having had ſome ſhare in the match. I will omit 'likewiſe the tender ſcene which paſſed between Ame-'lia and myſelf previous to my departure.'

'Indeed, I beg you would not,' cries Miſs Matthews; 'nothing delights me more than ſcenes of ten-'derneſs. I ſhould be glad to know, if poſſible, every 'ſyllable which was uttered on both ſides.'

'I will indulge you then,' cries Booth, 'as far as is 'in my power. Indeed, I believe I am able to recol-'lect much the greateſt part; for the impreſſion is ne-'ver to be effaced from my memory.'

He then proceeded as Miſs Matthews deſired; but leſt all our readers ſhould not be of her opinion, we will, according to our uſual cuſtom, endeavour to accommodate ourſelves to every taſte, and ſhall therefore place this ſcene in a chapter by itſelf, which we deſire all our readers who do not love, or who perhaps do not know the pleaſure of tenderneſs, to paſs over; ſince they may do this without any prejudice to the thread of the narrative.

CHAP. II.

Containing a ſcene of the tender kind.

'THE doctor, Madam,' continued Booth, 'ſpent his 'evening at Mrs. Harris's houſe, where I ſat with 'him whilſt he ſmoaked his pillow-pipe, as his phraſe 'is,

'is. Amelia was retired above half an hour to her 'chamber, before I went to her. At my entrance I 'found her on her knees; a poſture in which I never 'diſturbed her. In a few minutes ſhe aroſe, came to 'me, and embracing me, ſaid, ſhe had been praying 'for reſolution to ſupport the crueleſt moment ſhe had 'ever undergone, or could poſſibly undergo. I remind-'ed her how much more bitter a farewel would be on a 'death-bed, when we never could meet, in this world 'at leaſt, again. I then endeavoured to leſſen all thoſe 'objects which alarmed her moſt, and particularly 'the danger I was to encounter; upon which head I 'ſeemed a little to comfort her. But the probable 'length of my abſence, and the certain length of my 'voyage, were circumſtances which no oratory of mine 'could even palliate. "Oh, Heavens!" ſaid ſhe, burſt-'ing into tears, "can I bear to think that hundreds, "thouſands, for aught I know, of miles or leagues, "of lands and ſeas are between us! What is the proſ-"pect from that mount in our garden where I have ſat "ſo many happy hours with my Billy? what is the "diſtance between that and the fartheſt hill which we "ſee from thence, compared to the diſtance which will "be between us? You cannot wonder at this idea; you "muſt remember, my Billy, at this place, this very "thought came formerly into my forboding mind. I "then begged you to leave the army: why would you "not comply? Did I not tell you then, that the ſmalleſt "cottage we could ſurvey from the mount, would be "with you a paradiſe to me: it would be ſo ſtill; why "can't my Billy think ſo? Am I ſo much his ſuperior "in love? Where is the diſhonour, Billy? or if there be "any, will it reach our ears in our little hut? Are glory "and fame, and not his Amelia, the happineſs of my "huſband? Go then, purchaſe them at my expence. "You will pay a few ſighs, perhaps a few tears at part-"ing, and then new ſcenes will drive away the thoughts "of poor Amelia from your boſom: but what aſſiſtance "ſhall I have in my affliction? Not that any change of

"ſcene could drive you one moment from my remem-
"brance; yet here every object I behold will place your
"loved idea in the livelieſt manner before my eyes. This
"is the bed in which you have repoſed; that is the
"chair on which you have ſat: upon theſe boards you
"have ſtood; theſe books you have read to me. Can I
"walk among our beds of flowers, without viewing
"your favourites? nay, thoſe which you have planted
"with your own hands? Can I ſee one beauty from our
"beloved mount, which you have not pointed out to
"me?" Thus ſhe went on; the woman, Madam, you
ſee, ſtill prevailing.'--'Since you mention it,' ſays Miſs
Matthews with a ſmile, 'I own the ſame obſervation
'occurred to me. It is too natural to us to conſider our-
'ſelves only, Mr. Booth.'---'You ſhall hear,' he cried.
'At laſt, the thoughts of her preſent condition ſuggeſted
'themſelves. "But if," ſaid ſhe, "my ſituation, even
"in health, will be ſo intolerable, how ſhall I, in the
"danger and agonies of child-birth, ſupport your ab-
"ſence!" Here ſhe ſtopped, and looking on me with all
'the tenderneſs imaginable, cried out, "And am I then
"ſuch a wretch, to wiſh for your preſence at ſuch a ſea-
"ſon! Ought I not to rejoice that you are out of the
"hearing of my cries, or the knowledge of my pains!
"If I die, will you not have eſcaped the horrors of a
"parting ten thouſand times more dreadful than this!
"Go, go, my Billy! the very circumſtance which made
"me moſt dread your departure, hath perfectly recon-
"ciled me to it. I perceive clearly now that I was only
"wiſhing to ſupport my own weakneſs with your ſtrength,
"and to relieve my own pains at the price of yours.
"Believe me, my love, I am aſhamed of myſelf." I
'caught her in my arms with raptures not to be expreſſed
'in words, calling her my heroine; ſure none ever better
'deſerved that name; after which we remained for ſome
'time ſpeechleſs, and locked in each others embraces.'
---'I am convinced,' ſaid Miſs Matthews with a ſigh,
'there are moments in life worth purchaſing with
'worlds.'

'At

'At length the fatal morning came. I endeavoured 'to hide every pang of my heart, and to wear the utmoſt 'gaiety in my countenance. Amelia acted the ſame 'part. In theſe aſſumed characters we met the family at 'breakfaſt; at their breakfaſt, I mean, for we were 'both full already. The doctor had ſpent above an hour 'that morning in diſcourſe with Mrs. Harris, and had 'in ſome meaſure reconciled her to my departure. He 'now made uſe of every art to relieve the poor diſtreſſed 'Amelia; not by inveighing againſt the folly of grief, 'or by ſeriouſly adviſing her not to grieve; both which 'were ſufficiently performed by Miſs Betty. The doc-'tor, on the contrary, had recourſe to every means 'which might caſt a veil over the idea of grief, and raiſe 'comfortable images in my angel's mind. He endea-'voured to leſſen the ſuppoſed length of my abſence, by 'diſcourſing on matters which are more diſtant in time. 'He ſaid he intended next year to rebuild part of his par-'ſonage-houſe; "and you, captain," ſays he, "ſhall "lay the corner ſtone, I promiſe you:" with many other 'inſtances of the like nature; which produced, I believe, 'ſome good effect on us both.

'Amelia ſpoke but little; indeed, more tears than 'words dropped from her: however, ſhe ſeemed reſolved 'to bear her affliction with reſignation. But when the 'dreadful news arrived, that the horſes were ready, and 'I, having taken my leave of all the reſt, at laſt ap-'proached her, ſhe was unable to ſupport the conflict with 'nature any longer; and clinging round my neck, ſhe 'cried, "Farewell, farewell for ever; for I ſhall never, "never, ſee you more!" At which words the blood en-'tirely forſook her lovely cheeks, and ſhe became a life-'leſs corpſe in my arms.

'Amelia continued ſo long motionleſs, that the doctor, 'as well as Mrs. Harris, began to be under the moſt ter-'rible apprehenſions: ſo they informed me afterwards; 'for at that time I was incapable of making any obſerva-'tion. I had indeed very little more uſe of my ſenſes than 'the dear creature whom I ſupported. At length, how-

'ever, we were all delivered from our fears; and life 'again viſited the loveliest manſion that human nature 'ever afforded.

'I had been and yet was ſo terrified with what had 'happened, and Amelia continued yet ſo weak and ill, 'that I determined, whatever might be the conſequence, 'not to leave her that day: which reſolution ſhe was no 'ſooner acquainted with, than ſhe fell on her knees, cry-'ing, "Good heaven! I thank thee for this reprieve at "leaſt. Oh! that every hour of my future life could be "crammed into this dear day!"

'Our good friend the doctor remained with us. He 'ſaid, he had intended to viſit a family in ſome affliction; "but I don't know," ſays he, "why I ſhould ride a do-"zen miles after affliction, when we have enough here." 'Of all mankind the doctor is the beſt of comforters. 'As his exceſſive good-nature makes him take vaſt de-'light in the office; ſo his deep penetration into the hu-'man mind, joined to his great experience, renders him the 'moſt wonderful proficient in it; and he ſo well knows 'when to ſoothe, when to reaſon, and when to ridicule, 'that he never applies any of theſe arts improperly, which 'is almoſt univerſally the caſe with the phyſicians of the 'mind, and which it requires very great judgment and 'dexterity to avoid.

'The doctor principally applied himſelf to ridiculing 'the dangers of the ſiege, in which he ſucceeded ſo well, 'that he ſometimes forced a ſmile even into the face of 'Amelia. But what moſt comforted her were the ar-'guments to convince her of the probability of my ſpeedy, 'if not immediate return. He ſaid, the general opinion 'was, that the place would be taken before our arrival 'there: in which caſe, we ſhould have nothing more to 'do, than to make the beſt of our way home again.

'Amelia was ſo lulled by theſe arts, that ſhe paſſed 'the day much better than I expected. Though the 'doctor could not make pride ſtrong enough to conquer 'love, yet he exalted the former to make ſome ſtand 'againſt the latter; inſomuch, that my poor Amelia,

'I be-

'I believe more than once, flattered herſelf, (to ſpeak 'the language of the world) that her reaſon had 'gained an entire victory over her paſſion; till Love 'brought up a reinforcement, if I may uſe that term, 'of tender ideas, and bore down all before him.

'In the evening, the doctor and I paſſed another half 'hour together, when he propoſed to me to endeavour to 'leave Amelia aſleep in the morning, and promiſed me 'to be at hand when ſhe awaked, and to ſupport her 'with all the aſſiſtance in his power. He added, that 'nothing was more fooliſh, than for friends to take leave 'of each other. "It is true, indeed," ſays he, "in "the common acquaintance and friendſhip of the world, "this is a very harmleſs ceremony; but between two "perſons who really love each other, the Church of "Rome never invented a penance half ſo ſevere as this, "which we abſurdly impoſe on ourſelves."

'I greatly approved the doctor's propoſal; thanked 'him; and promiſed, if poſſible, to put it in execution. 'He then ſhook me by the hand, and heartily wiſhed 'me well: ſaying, in his blunt way---"Well, boy, I "hope to ſee thee crowned with laurels at thy return. "One comfort I have, at leaſt, that ſtone walls and a "ſea will prevent thee from running away."

'When I had left the doctor, I repaired to my 'Amelia, whom I found in her chamber, employed in 'a very different manner from what ſhe had been the 'preceding night; ſhe was buſy in packing up ſome 'trinkets in a caſket, which ſhe deſired me to carry 'with me. The caſket was her own work, and ſhe had 'juſt faſtened it as I came to her.

'Her eyes very plainly diſcovered what had paſſed 'while ſhe was engaged in her work; however, her coun-'tenance was now ſerene, and ſhe ſpoke, at leaſt with 'ſome chearfulneſs. But after ſome time, "You muſt "take care of this caſket, Billy," ſaid ſhe; "you muſt, "indeed, Billy--- for---" Here paſſion almoſt choaked 'her, till a flood of tears gave her relief, and then ſhe 'proceeded---"for I ſhall be the happieſt woman that

"ever

" ever was born when I see it again."---I told her,
' with the blessing of God that day would soon come.
" Soon!" answered she: " no, Billy, not soon; a week
" is an age---but yet the happy day may come. It shall,
" it must, it will! Yes, Billy, we shall meet never to
" part again---even in this world, I hope."---Pardon
' my weakness, Miss Matthews; but, upon my soul!
' I cannot help it;' cried he, wiping his eyes. ' Well,
' I wonder at your patience, and I will try it no longer---
' Amelia, tired out with so long a struggle between va-
' riety of passions, and having not closed her eyes during
' three successive nights, towards the morning fell into a
' profound sleep: in which sleep I left her---and having
' dressed myself with all the expedition imaginable, sing-
' ing, whistling, hurrying, attempting by every method
' to banish thought, I mounted my horse, which I had
' over-night ordered to be ready, and galloped away
' from that house where all my treasure was deposited.

' Thus, Madam, I have, in obedience to your com-
' mands, run through a scene, which, if it hath been
' tiresome to you, you must yet acquit me of having
' obtruded upon you. This I am convinced of, that
' no one is capable of tasting such a scene, who hath not
' a heart full of tenderness; and perhaps not even then,
' unless he hath been in the same situation.

CHAP. III.

In which Mr. Booth sets forward on his Journey.

' WELL, Madam, we have now taken our leave of
' Amelia. I rode a full mile before I once suf-
' fered myself to look back; but now being come to
' the top of a little hill, the last spot I knew which
' could give me a prospect of Mrs. Harris's house, my
' resolution failed; I stopped, and cast my eyes back-
' ward. Shall I tell you what I felt at that instant! I
' do assure you, I am not able. So many tender ideas
' crouded at once into my mind, that, if I may use the
' expression, they almost dissolved my heart. And
' now, Madam, the most unfortunate accident came
' first into my head. This was, that I had in the hurry

' and

'and confuſion left the dear caſket behind me. The 'thought of going back at firſt ſuggeſted itſelf; but 'the conſequences of that were too apparent. I there-'fore reſolved to ſend my man, and in the mean time to 'ride on ſoftly on my road. He immediately executed 'my orders, and after ſome time feeding my eyes with 'that delicious, and yet heart-felt proſpect, I at laſt 'turned my horſe to deſcend the hill, and proceeded 'about a hundred yards, when, conſidering with my-'ſelf, that I ſhould loſe no time by a ſecond indul-'gence, I again turned back, and once more feaſted 'my ſight with the ſame painful pleaſure till my man 'returned, bringing me the caſket, and an account that 'Amelia ſtill continued in the ſweet ſleep I left her. 'I now ſuddenly turned my horſe for the laſt time, and 'with the utmoſt reſolution purſued my journey.

'I perceived my man at his return---But before I 'mention any thing of him, it may be proper, Ma-'dam, to acquaint you who he was. He was the 'foſter-brother of my Amelia. This young fellow 'had taken it into his head to go into the army; and 'he was deſirous to ſerve under my command. The 'doctor conſented to diſcharge him; his mother at 'laſt yielded to his importunities; and I was very ea-'ſily prevailed on to liſt one of the handſomeſt young 'fellows in England.

'You will eaſily believe I had ſome little partiality 'to a perſon any way related to my dear Amelia; but as 'he had never ſeen the regiment, I had no opportunity 'to ſhew him any great mark of favour. Indeed, he 'waited on me as my ſervant; and I treated him 'with all the tenderneſs which can be uſed to one in 'that ſtation.

'When I was about to change into the horſe-'guards, the poor fellow began to droop, fearing that 'he ſhould no longer be in the ſame corps with me; 'though certainly that would not have been the caſe. 'However, he had never mentioned one word of his diſ-'ſatisfaction. He is, indeed, a fellow of a noble ſpi-

'rit;

'rit; but when he heard I was to remain where I was, 'and that we were going to Gibraltar together, he 'fell into tranſports of joy little ſhort of madneſs. In 'ſhort, the poor fellow had imbibed a very ſtrong 'affection for me; though this was what I knew no-'thing of till long after.

'When he returned to me, then, as I was ſaying, 'with the caſket, I obſerved his eyes all over blub-'bered with tears. I rebuked him a little too raſhly 'on this occaſion. "Heyday!" ſays I, "what is "the meaning of this? I hope I have not a milk-ſop "with me. If I thought you would ſhew ſuch a face "to the enemy, I would leave you behind."--- "Your honour need not fear that," anſwered he; "I "ſhall find nobody there that I ſhall love well enough "to make me cry." I was highly pleaſed with this an-'ſwer, in which I thought I could diſcover both ſenſe 'and ſpirit. I then aſked him what had occaſioned thoſe 'tears ſince he had left me; (for he had no ſign of any 'at that time) and whether he had ſeen his mother at 'Mrs. Harris's. He anſwered in the negative, and 'begged that I would aſk him no more queſtions; 'adding, that he was not very apt to cry, and he 'hoped he ſhould never give me ſuch another opportu-'nity of blaming him. I mention this only as an in-'ſtance of his affection towards me; for I never could 'account for thoſe tears, any otherwiſe than by placing 'them to the account of that diſtreſs in which he had 'left me at that time. We travelled full forty miles 'that day, without baiting; when arriving at the inn 'where I intended to reſt that night, I retired imme-'diately to my chamber, with my dear Amelia's caſ-'ket, the opening of which was the niceſt repaſt, and 'to which every other hunger gave way.

'It is impoſſible to mention to you all the little 'matters with which Amelia had furniſhed this caſ-'ket. It contained medicines of all kinds, which her 'mother, who was the Lady Bountiful of that coun-'try, had ſupplied her with. The moſt valuable of

'all

'all to me was a lock of her dear hair, which I have 'from that time to this worn in my boſom. What 'would I have then given for a little picture of my dear 'angel, which ſhe had loſt from her chamber about a 'month before, and which we had the higheſt reaſon 'in the world to imagine her ſiſter had taken away! 'for the ſuſpicion lay only between her and Amelia's 'maid, who was of all creatures the honeſteſt, and 'whom her miſtreſs had often truſted with things of 'much greater value: for the picture, which was ſet 'in gold, and had two or three little diamonds 'round it, was worth about twelve guineas only; 'whereas Amelia left jewels in her care of much 'greater value.'

'Sure,' cries Miſs Matthews, 'ſhe could not be 'ſuch a paltry pilferer?'

'Not on account of the gold or the jewels,' cries 'Booth. 'We imputed it to mere ſpite, with which 'I aſſure you ſhe abounds; and ſhe knew that next to 'Amelia herſelf, there was nothing which I valued ſo 'much as this little picture; for ſuch a reſemblance 'did it bear to the original, that Hogarth himſelf did 'never, I believe, draw a ſtronger likeneſs. Spite, 'therefore, was the only motive to this cruel depreda-'tion; and indeed her behaviour on the occaſion ſuf-'ficiently convinced us both of the juſtice of our ſuſ-'picion, though we neither of us durſt accuſe her; 'and ſhe herſelf had the aſſurance to inſiſt very ſtrongly '(though ſhe could not prevail) with Amelia to turn 'away her innocent maid, ſaying, ſhe would not live 'in the houſe with a thief.'

Miſs Matthews now diſcharged ſome curſes on Miſs Betty, not much worth repeating, and then Mr. Booth proceeded in his relation.

CHAP. IV.

A Sea-Piece.

'THE next day we joined the regiment, which was 'ſoon after to embark. Nothing but mirth and 'jollity were in the countenances of every other officer

'and

'and soldier; and as I now met several friends whom I 'had not seen for above a year before, I passed several happy hours, in which poor Amelia's image seldom 'obtruded itself to interrupt my pleasure. To confess 'the truth, dear Miss Matthews, the tendereſt of pas-'sions is capable of subsiding; nor is absence from our 'deareſt friends so insupportable as it may at first ap-'pear. Distance of time and place do really cure 'what they seem to aggravate; and taking leave of 'our friends resembles taking leave of the world; con-'cerning which it hath been often said, that it is not 'death, but dying, which is terrible.' Here Miss Matthews burst into a fit of laughter, and cried, 'I 'sincerely ask your pardon; but I cannot help laughing 'at the gravity of your philosophy.' Booth answered, that the doctrine of the passions had been always his favourite study; that he was convinced every man acted entirely from that passion which was uppermost: 'Can 'I then think,' said he, 'without entertaining the ut-'most contempt for myself, that any pleasure upon 'earth could drive the thoughts of Amelia one instant 'from my mind!

'At length we embarked on board a transport, and 'sailed for Gibraltar; but the wind, which was at first 'fair, soon chopped about; so that we were obliged, 'for several days, to beat to windward, as the sea-'phrase is. During this time, the taste which I had 'of a sea-faring life did not appear extremely agree-'able. We rolled up and down in a little narrow 'cabin, in which were three officers, all of us ex-'tremely sea-sick; our sickness being much aggra-'vated by the motion of the ship, by the view of each 'other, and by the stench of the men. But this was 'but a little taste indeed of the misery which was to 'follow: for we were got but about six leagues to the 'westward of Scilly, when a violent storm arose at 'north-east, which soon raised the waves to the height 'of mountains. The horror of this is not to be ade-'quately described to those who have never seen the like.

'The

'The ſtorm began in the evening, and as the clouds 'brought on the night apace, it was ſoon entirely dark; 'nor had we, during many hours, any other light than 'what was cauſed by the jarring elements, which fre- 'quently ſent forth flaſhes, or rather ſtreams of fire; 'and whilſt theſe preſented the moſt dreadful objects to 'our eyes, the roaring of the winds, and the daſhing of 'the waves againſt the ſhip and each other, formed a 'ſound altogether as horrible to our ears; while our 'ſhip, ſometimes lifted up as it were to the ſkies, and 'ſometimes ſwept away at once as into the loweſt 'abyſs, ſeemed to be the ſport of the winds and ſeas. 'The captain himſelf almoſt gave all for loſt, and ex- 'preſſed his apprehenſion of being inevitably caſt on 'the rocks of Scilly, and beat to pieces. And now, 'while ſome on board were addreſſing themſelves to 'the Supreme Being, and others applying for com- 'fort to ſtrong liquors, my whole thoughts were en- 'tirely engaged by my Amelia. A thouſand tender 'ideas crouded into my mind. I can truly ſay, that I 'had not a ſingle conſideration about myſelf, in which 'ſhe was not concerned. Dying, to me, was leaving 'her; and the fear of never ſeeing her more, was a 'dagger ſtuck in my heart. Again, all the terrors 'with which this ſtorm, if it reached her ears, muſt fill 'her gentle mind on my account, and the agonies which 'ſhe muſt undergo, when ſhe heard of my fate, gave me 'ſuch intolerable pangs, that I now repented my re- 'ſolution, and wiſhed, I own I wiſhed, that I had ta- 'ken her advice, and preferred love and a cottage to 'all the dazzling charms of honour.

'While I was tormenting myſelf with theſe medi- 'tations, and had concluded myſelf as certainly loſt, 'the maſter came into the cabin, and with a chearful 'voice aſſured us that we had eſcaped the danger, and 'that we had certainly paſſed to the weſtward of the rock. 'This was comfortable news to all preſent; and my 'captain, who had been ſome time on his knees, leapt 'ſuddenly up, and teſtified his joy with a great oath.

'A perſon unuſed to the ſea would have been aſtoniſhed at the ſatisfaction which now diſcovered itſelf in the maſter, or in any on board: for the ſtorm ſtill raged with great violence, and the day-light, which now appeared, preſented us with ſights of horror ſufficient to terrify minds which were not abſolute ſlaves to the paſſion of fear; but ſo great is the force of habit, that what inſpires a landman with the higheſt apprehenſions of danger, gives not the leaſt concern to a ſailor, to whom rocks and quickſands are almoſt the only objects of terror.

'The maſter, however, was a little miſtaken in the preſent inſtance; for he had not left the cabin above an hour, before my man came running to me, and acquainted me that the ſhip was half full of water; that the ſailors were going to hoiſt out the boat and ſave themſelves, and begged me to come that moment along with him, as I tendered my preſervation. With this account, which was conveyed to me in a whiſper, I acquainted both the captain and enſign; and we all together immediately mounted the deck, where we found the maſter making uſe of all his oratory to perſuade the ſailors that the ſhip was in no danger; and at the ſame employed all his authority to ſet the pumps a-going, which he aſſured them would keep the water under, and ſave his dear Lovely Peggy, (for that was the name of the ſhip) which he ſwore he loved as dearly as his own ſoul.

'Indeed this ſufficiently appeared; for the leak was ſo great, and the water flowed in ſo plentifully, that his Lovely Peggy was half filled before he could be brought to think of quitting her; but now the boat was brought along-ſide the ſhip; and the maſter himſelf, notwithſtanding all his love for her, quitted his ſhip, and leaped into the boat. Every man preſent attempted to follow his example, when I heard the voice of my ſervant roaring forth my name in a kind of agony. I made directly to the ſhip's ſide, but was too late: for the boat, being already overladen, put di-

'rectly

'rectly off. And now, Madam, I am going to relate 'to you an inſtance of heroic affection in a poor fel- 'low towards his maſter, to which love itſelf, even 'among perſons of ſuperior education, can produce 'but few ſimilar inſtances. My poor man being un- 'able to get me with him into the boat, leaped ſud- 'denly into the ſea, and ſwam back to the ſhip; and 'when I gently rebuked him for his raſhneſs, he an- 'ſwered, he choſe rather to die with me, than to live 'to carry the account of my death to my Amelia; at 'the ſame time burſting into a flood of tears, he cried, "Good Heavens! what will that poor lady feel when "ſhe hears of this!" This tender concern for my 'dear love, endeared the poor fellow more to me than 'the gallant inſtance which he had juſt before given of 'his affection towards myſelf.

'And now, Madam, my eyes were ſhocked with a 'ſight, the horror of which can ſcarce be imagined: 'for the boat had ſcarce got four hundred yards from 'the ſhip, when it was ſwallowed up by the mercileſs 'waves, which now ran ſo high, that out of the num- 'ber of perſons which were in the boat, none recovered 'the ſhip; though many of them we ſaw miſerably 'periſh before our eyes, ſome of them very near us, 'without any poſſibility of giving them the leaſt aſ- 'ſiſtance.

'But whatever we felt for them, we felt, I believe, 'more for ourſelves, expecting every minute that we 'ſhould ſhare the ſame fate. Among the reſt, one of our 'officers appeared quite ſtupified with fear. I never in- 'deed ſaw a more miſerable example of the great power 'of that paſſion: I muſt not, however, omit doing 'him juſtice, by ſaying, that I afterwards ſaw the 'ſame man behave well in an engagement, in which 'he was wounded. Though there, likewiſe, he was 'ſaid to have betrayed the ſame paſſion of fear in his 'countenance.

'The other of our officers was no leſs ſtupified (if I 'may ſo expreſs myſelf) with fool-hardineſs, and

'ſeemed almoſt inſenſible of his danger. To ſay the 'truth, I have, from this, and ſome other inſtances 'which I have ſeen, been almoſt inclined to think, that 'the courage as well as cowardice of fools proceeds 'from not knowing what is or what is not the proper 'object of fear: indeed, we may account for the ex-'treme hardineſs of ſome men, in the ſame manner as 'for the terrors of children at a bugbear; the child 'knows not but that the bugbear is the proper object 'of fear, the blockhead knows not that a cannon-ball 'is ſo.

'As to the remaining part of the ſhip's crew, and 'the ſoldiery, moſt of them were dead drunk; and the 'reſt were endeavouring, as faſt as they could, to pre-'pare for death in the ſame manner.

'In this dreadful ſituation we were taught, that no 'human condition ſhould inſpire men with abſolute 'deſpair; for as the ſtorm had ceaſed for ſome time, 'the ſwelling of the ſea began conſiderably to abate; 'and we now perceived the man of war which convoyed 'us, at no great diſtance aſtern. Thoſe aboard her 'eaſily perceived our diſtreſs, and made towards us. 'When they came pretty near, they hoiſted out two 'boats to our aſſiſtance. Theſe no ſooner approached 'the ſhip, than they were inſtantaneouſly filled, and I 'myſelf got a place in one of them, chiefly by the aid 'of my honeſt ſervant, of whoſe fidelity to me on all 'occaſions I cannot ſpeak or think too highly. In-'deed I got into the boat ſo much the more eaſily, as 'a great number on board the ſhip were rendered by 'drink incapable of taking any care for themſelves. 'There was time, however, for the boat to paſs and 'repaſs; ſo that when we came to call over names, 'three only, of all that remained in the ſhip after the 'loſs of her own boat, were miſſing.

'The captain, enſign, and myſelf, were received 'with many congratulations by our officers on board 'the man of war. The ſea-officers too, all except 'the captain, paid us their compliments, though theſe

'were

'were of the rougher kind, and not without ſeveral 'jokes on our eſcape. As for the captain himſelf, we 'ſcarce ſaw him during many hours; and when he ap- 'peared, he preſented a view of majeſty beyond any 'that I had ever ſeen. The dignity which he pre- 'ſerved did indeed give me rather the idea of a Mogul, 'or a Turkiſh emperor, than of any of the monarchs 'of Chriſtendom. To ſay the truth, I could reſemble 'his walk on the deck to nothing but to the image of 'Captain Gulliver ſtrutting among the Lilliputians; 'he ſeemed to think himſelf a being of an order ſupe- 'rior to all around him, and more eſpecially to us of 'the land ſervice. Nay, ſuch was the behaviour of 'all the ſea-officers and ſailors to us and our ſoldiers, 'that inſtead of appearing to be ſubjects of the ſame 'prince, engaged in one quarrel, and joined to ſup- 'port one cauſe, we landmen rather ſeemed to be cap- 'tives on board an enemy's veſſel. This is a grievous 'misfortune, and often proves ſo fatal to the ſervice, 'that it is great pity ſome means could not be found 'of curing it.'

Here Mr. Booth ſtopped a while, to take breath. We will therefore give the ſame refreſhment to the reader.

CHAP. V.

The Arrival of Booth at Gibraltar, with what there befel him.

'THE adventures,' continued Booth, 'which hap- 'pened to me from this day till my arrival at 'Gibraltar, are not worth recounting to you. After 'a voyage, the remainder of which was tolerably proſ- 'perous, we arrived in that garriſon, the natural 'ſtrength of which is ſo well known to the whole 'world.

'About a week after my arrival, it was my fortune 'to be ordered on a ſally-party, in which my left-leg 'was broke with a muſquet-ball; and I ſhould moſt cer- 'tainly have either periſhed miſerably, or muſt have 'owed my preſervation to ſome of the enemy, had not

'my faithful ſervant carried me off on his ſhoulders,
'and afterwards, with the aſſiſtance of one of his com-
'rades, brought me back into the garriſon.

'The agony of my wound was ſo great, that it
'threw me into a fever, from whence my ſurgeon ap-
'prehended much danger. I now began again to feel for
'Amelia, and for myſelf on her account: and the diſ-
'order of my mind occaſioned by ſuch melancholy con-
'templations, very highly aggravated the diſtemper of
'my body; inſomuch, that it would probably have
'proved fatal, had it not been for the friendſhip of one
'Captain James, an officer of our regiment, and an old
'acquaintance, who is undoubtedly one of the plea-
'ſanteſt companions, and one of the beſt natured men
'in the world. This worthy man, who had a head
'and a heart perfectly adequate to every office of
'friendſhip, ſtaid with me almoſt day and night during
'my illneſs; and by ſtrengthening my hopes, raiſing
'my ſpirits, and chearing my thoughts, preſerved me
'from deſtruction.

'The behaviour of this man alone is a ſufficient
'proof of the truth of my doctrine, that all men act
'entirely from their paſſions; for Bob James can ne-
'ver be ſuppoſed to act from any motive of virtue and
'religion, ſince he conſtantly laughs at both; and yet
'his conduct towards me alone demonſtrates a degree
'of goodneſs which, perhaps, few of the votaries of
'either virtue or religion can equal.'

'You need not take much pains,' anſwered Miſs Matthews with a ſmile, 'to convince me of your doc-
'trine. I have been always an advocate for the ſame.
'I look upon the two words you mention, to ſerve only
'as cloaks under which hypocriſy may be the better
'enabled to cheat the world. I have been of that
'opinion ever ſince I read that charming fellow Man-
'devil.'

'Pardon me, Madam!' anſwered Booth; 'I hope
'you do not agree with Mandevil neither, who hath
'repreſented human nature as the picture of the high-

'eſt

'eſt deformity. He hath left out of his ſyſtem the 'beſt paſſion which the mind can poſſeſs, and attempts 'to derive the effects or energies of that paſſion from 'the baſe impulſes of pride or fear. Whereas, it is 'as certain that love exiſts in the mind of man, as that 'its oppoſite hatred doth; and the ſame reaſons will 'equally prove the exiſtence of the one, as the exiſt-'ence of the other.'

'I don't know, indeed, replied the lady; 'I never 'thought much about the matter. This I know, that 'when I read Mandevil, I thought all he ſaid was 'true; and I have been often told, that he proves re-'ligion and virtue to be only mere names. However, 'if he denies there is any ſuch thing as love, that is 'moſt certainly wrong. I am afraid I can give him the 'lie myſelf.'

'I will join with you, Madam, in that,' anſwered Booth, 'at any time.'

'Will you join with me,' anſwered ſhe, looking eagerly at him---'O Mr. Booth! I know not what I 'was going to ſay---What---where did you leave off? 'I would not interrupt you---but I am impatient to 'know ſomething.'

'What, Madam,' cries Booth, 'If I can give 'you any ſatisfaction----'No, no,' ſaid ſhe, 'I muſt 'hear all; I would not for the world break the thread 'of your ſtory. Beſides, I am afraid to aſk. Pray, 'pray, Sir, go on.'

'Well, Madam,' cries Booth, 'I think I was 'mentioning the extraordinary acts of friendſhip done 'me by Captain James; nor can I help taking notice 'of the almoſt unparalleled fidelity of poor Atkinſon, '(for that was my man's name) who was not only 'conſtant in the aſſiduity of his attendance, but during 'the time of my danger demonſtrated a concern for me 'which I can hardly account for, as my prevailing on 'his captain to make him a ſerjeant was the firſt fa-'vour he ever received at my hands, and this did not 'happen till I was almoſt perfectly recovered of my

'broken

'broken leg. Poor fellow! I ſhall never forget the 'extravagant joy his halbert gave him; I remember 'it the more, becauſe it was one of the happieſt days 'of my own life: for it was upon this day that I re-'ceived a letter from my dear Amelia, after a long ſi-'lence, acquainting me that ſhe was out of all danger 'from her lying-in.

'I was now once more able to perform my duty; 'when (ſo unkind was the fortune of war) the ſecond 'time I mounted guard, I received a violent contuſion 'from the burſting of a bomb. I was felled to the 'ground, where I lay breathleſs by the blow, till ho-'neſt Atkinſon came to my aſſiſtance, and conveyed 'me to my room, where a ſurgeon immediately at-'tended me.

'The injury I had now received was much more 'dangerous in my ſurgeon's opinion than the former; 'it cauſed me to ſpit blood, and was attended with a 'fever and other bad ſymptoms, ſo that very fatal 'conſequences were apprehended.

'In this ſituation the image of Amelia haunted me 'day and night; and the apprehenſions of never ſeeing 'her more were ſo intolerable, that I had thoughts of 'reſigning my commiſſion, and returning home, weak 'as I was, that I might have, at leaſt, the ſatisfac-'tion of dying in the arms of my love. Captain 'James, however, perſiſted in diſſuading me from any 'ſuch reſolution. He told me my honour was too 'much concerned; attempted to raiſe my hopes of re-'covery to the utmoſt of his power; but chiefly he 'prevailed on me, by ſuggeſting, that if the worſt 'which I apprended ſhould happen, it was much better 'for Amelia that ſhe ſhould be abſent than preſent, in ſo 'melancholy an hour. "I know," cried he, "the ex-"treme joy which muſt ariſe in you from meeting again "with Amelia, and the comfort of expiring in her "arms; but conſider what ſhe herſelf muſt endure "upon the dreadful occaſion, and you would not "wiſh to purchaſe any happineſs at the price of ſo

"much

" much pain to her." This argument at length pre-
' vailed on me; and it was, after many long debates,
' reſolved, that ſhe ſhould not even know my preſent
' condition till my doom either for life or death was
' abſolutely fixed.'

' Oh, Heavens! how great, how generous!' cried Miſs Matthews. Booth, thou art a noble fellow; and ' I ſcarce think there is a woman upon earth worthy ' ſo exalted a paſſion!'

Booth made a modeſt anſwer to the compliment which Miſs Matthews had paid him: this drew more civilities from the lady; and theſe again more acknowledgments. All which we ſhall paſs by, and proceed with our hiſtory.

CHAP. VI.

Containing Matters which will pleaſe ſome Readers.

' TWO months, and more, had I continued in a ' ſtate of uncertainty, ſometimes with more flat-
' tering, and ſometimes with more alarming ſymptoms;
' when one afternoon poor Atkinſon came running into
' my room, all pale and out of breath, and begged me
' not to be ſurprized at his news. I aſked him eagerly
' what was the matter, and if it was any thing con-
' cerning Amelia. I had ſcarce uttered the dear name,
' when ſhe herſelf ruſhed into the room, and ran ha-
' ſtily to me, crying, " Yes, it is, it is your Amelia
' herſelf!"

' There is nothing ſo difficult to deſcribe, and ge-
' nerally ſo dull when deſcribed, as ſcenes of exceſſive
' tenderneſs.'

' Can you think ſo? ſays Miſs Matthews: ' ſurely
' there is nothing ſo charming!---O Mr. Booth! our
' ſex is damned by the want of tenderneſs in yours.
' O, were they all like you!---Certainly no man was
' ever your equal!'

' Indeed, Madam,' cries Booth, ' you honour me
' too much---But---well---when the firſt tranſports of
' our meeting were over, Amelia began gently to chide
' me for having concealed my illneſs from her; for in

' three

'three letters which I had writ her since the accident 'had happened, there was not the least mention of it, 'or any hint given by which she could possibly con-'clude I was otherwise than in perfect health. And 'when I had excused myself by assigning the true reason, 'she cried, "O Mr. Booth! and do you know so lit-"tle of your Amelia, as to think I could or would sur-"vive you! Would it not be better for one dreadful "sight to break my heart all at once, than to break it "by degrees? O Billy! can any thing pay me for the "loss of this embrace!"-----But I ask your pardon---- 'how ridiculous doth my fondness appear in your 'eyes!'

'How often,' answered she, 'shall I assert the con-'trary? What would you have me say, Mr. Booth? 'Shall I tell you I envy Mrs. Booth, of all the women 'in the world? Would you believe me, if I did? I 'hope you---what am I saying!----Pray make no fur-'ther apology, but go on.'

'After a scene,' continued he, 'too tender to be con-'ceived by many, Amelia informed me that she had 'received a letter from an unknown hand, acquainting 'her with my misfortune, and advising her, if she ever 'desired to see me more, to come directly to Gibraltar. 'She said, she should not have delayed a moment after 'receiving this letter, had not the same ship brought 'her one from me written with rather more than usual 'gaiety, and in which there was not the least mention 'of my indisposition. This, she said, greatly puzzled 'her and her mother, and the worthy divine endea-'voured to persuade her to give credit to my letter, 'and to impute the other to a species of wit with 'which the world greatly abounds. This consists en-'tirely in doing various kinds of mischief to our fel-'low-creatures; by belying one, deceiving another, 'exposing a third, and drawing in a fourth to expose 'himself: in short, by making some the objects of 'laughter, others of contempt; and indeed, not sel-

'dom

'dom, by ſubjecting them to very great inconveni-
'ences, perhaps to ruin, for the ſake of a jeſt.

'Mrs. Harris and the doctor derived the letter from
'this ſpecies of wit. Miſs Betty, however, was of a
'different opinion, and adviſed poor Amelia to apply
'to an officer whom the governor had ſent over in the
'ſame ſhip; by whom the report of my illneſs was ſo
'ſtrongly confirmed, that Amelia immediately reſolved
'on her voyage.

'I had a great curioſity to know the author of this
'letter; but not the leaſt trace of it could be diſcovered.
'The only perſon with whom I lived in any great
'intimacy was Captain James; and he, Madam,
'from what I have already told you, you will think
'to be the laſt perſon I could ſuſpect; beſides, he de-
'clared upon his honour, that he knew nothing of the
'matter; and no man's honour is, I believe, more ſa-
'cred. There was indeed an enſign of another regi-
'ment, who knew my wife, and had ſometimes viſited
'me in my illneſs; but he was a very unlikely man to
'intereſt himſelf much in any affairs which did not
'concern him: and he too declared he knew nothing
'of it.'

'And did you never diſcover this ſecret?' cried
Miſs Matthews. 'Never to this day,' anſwered Booth.

'I fancy,' ſaid ſhe, 'I could give a ſhrewd gueſs.
'What ſo likely, as that Mrs. Booth, when you left
'her, ſhould have given her foſter-brother orders to
'ſend her word of whatever befel you?---Yet ſtay---
'that could not be neither; for then ſhe would not have
'doubted whether ſhe ſhould leave dear England on the
'receipt of the letter. No; it muſt have been by ſome
'other means---yet that, I own, appeared extremely
'natural to me; for if I had been left by ſuch a huſband,
'I think I ſhould have purſued the ſame method.'

'No, Madam,' cried Booth; it muſt have been con-
'veyed by ſome other channel; for my Amelia, I am
'certain, was entirely ignorant of the manner; and as
'for poor Atkinſon, I am convinced he would not

'have

'have ventured to take such a step without acquainting 'me. Besides, the poor fellow had, I believe, such a 'regard for my wife, out of gratitude for the favours 'she had done his mother, that I make no doubt he was 'highly rejoiced at her absence from my melancholy 'scene. Well, whoever writ it, is a matter very im-'material; yet, as it seemed so odd and unaccountable 'an incident, I could not help mentioning it.

'From the time of Amelia's arrival nothing remark-'able happened till my perfect recovery; unless I should 'observe her remarkable behaviour, so full of care and 'tenderness, that it was perhaps without a parallel.'

'O no, Mr. Booth!' cries the lady; 'it is fully 'equalled, I am sure, by your gratitude. There is 'nothing, I believe, so very rare as gratitude in your 'sex, especially in husbands. So kind a remembrance 'is, indeed, more than a return to such an obligation: 'for where is the mighty obligation which a woman 'confers, who being possessed of an inestimable jewel, 'is so kind to herself as to be careful and tender of it; I 'do not say this to lessen your opinion of Mrs. Booth; 'I have no doubt but that she loves you as well as she 'is capable. But I would not have you think so 'meanly of our sex, as to imagine there are not a thou-'sand women susceptible of true tenderness towards a 'meritorious man. Believe me, Mr. Booth, if I had 'received such an account of an accident having hap-'pened to such a husband, a mother and a parson would 'not have held me a moment: I should have leapt into 'the first fishing-boat I could have found, and bid de-'fiance to the winds and waves. O there is no true 'tenderness but in a woman of spirit! I would not be 'understood all this while to reflect on Mrs. Booth. I 'am only defending the cause of my sex; for, upon my 'soul, such compliments to a wife are a satire on all 'the rest of woman-kind.'

'Sure you jest, Miss Matthews,' answered Booth 'with a smile. 'However, if you please, I will pro-'ceed in my story.

CHAP.

CHAP. VII.

The Captain, continuing his Story, recounts ſome Particulars which we doubt not to many good People will appear unnatural.

'I WAS ſcarce ſooner recovered from my indiſpoſition 'than Amelia herſelf fell ill. This, I am afraid, 'was occaſioned by the fatigues which I could not pre-'vent her from undergoing on my account; for as my 'diſeaſe went off with violent ſweats, during which 'the ſurgeon ſtrictly ordered that I ſhould lie by myſelf, 'my Amelia could not be prevailed upon to ſpend many 'hours in her own bed. During my reſtleſs fits, ſhe 'would ſometimes read to me ſeveral hours together. 'Indeed, it was not without difficulty that ſhe ever 'quitted the bed-ſide. Theſe fatigues, added to the 'uneaſineſs of her mind, overpowered her weak ſpirits, 'and threw her into one of the worſt diſorders that can 'poſſibly attend a woman. A diſorder very common 'among the ladies, and our phyſicians have not agreed 'upon its name. Some call it the fever on the ſpirits, 'ſome a nervous fever, ſome the vapours, and ſome 'the hyſterics.'

'O ſay no more!' cries Miſs Matthews: 'I pity 'you, I pity you from my ſoul! A man had better be 'plagued with all the curſes of Egypt, than with a va-'pouriſh wife.'

'Pity me, Madam!' anſwered Booth; 'pity rather 'that dear creature, who, from her love and care of my 'unworthy ſelf, contracted a diſtemper, the horrors of 'which are ſcarce to be imagined. It is indeed a ſort 'of complication of all diſeaſes together, with almoſt 'madneſs added to them. In this ſituation, the ſiege 'being at an end, the governor gave me leave to attend 'my wife to Montpelier, the air of which was judged 'to be the moſt likely to reſtore her to health. Upon 'this occaſion ſhe wrote to her mother to deſire a remit-'tance, and ſet forth the melancholy condition of her 'health, and her neceſſity for money, in ſuch terms as 'would have touched any boſom not void of humanity,

'though a ſtranger to the unhappy ſufferer. Her ſiſter 'anſwered it, and I believe I have a copy of the anſwer 'in my pocket. I keep it by me as a curioſity, and you 'would think it more ſo, could I ſhew you my Ame-'lia's letter.'

He then ſearched his pocket-book; and finding the letter, among many others, he read it in the following words---

"DEAR SISTER,

"MY mamma, being much diſordered, hath com-"manded me to tell you, ſhe is both ſhocked "and ſurprized at your extraordinary requeſt, or, as "ſhe chuſes to call it, order for money. You know, "my dear, ſhe ſays, that your marriage with this red-"coat man was entirely againſt her conſent, and the "opinion of all your family, (I am ſure I may here in-"clude myſelf in that number) and yet, after this fatal "act of diſobedience, ſhe was prevailed on to receive "you as her child; not, however, nor are you to un-"derſtand it, as the favourite which you was before. "She forgave you, but this was as a Chriſtian and a "parent; ſtill preſerving in her own mind a juſt ſenſe "of your diſobedience, and a juſt reſentment on that "account. And yet, notwithſtanding this reſentment, "ſhe deſires you to remember, that when you a ſecond "time ventured to oppoſe her authority, and nothing "would ſerve you but taking a ramble (an indecent one "I can't help ſaying) after your fellow, ſhe thought fit "to ſhew the exceſs of a mother's tenderneſs, and fur-"niſhed you with no leſs than fifty pounds for your "fooliſh voyage. How can ſhe then be otherwiſe than "ſurprized at your preſent demand? which, ſhould ſhe "be ſo weak to comply with, ſhe muſt expect to be "every month repeated, in order to ſupply the extra-"vagance of a young rakiſh officer. You ſay ſhe will "compaſſionate your ſufferings; yes, ſurely, ſhe doth "greatly compaſſionate them, and ſo do I too, though "you was neither ſo kind nor ſo civil as to ſuppoſe I "ſhould. But I forgive all your ſlights to me, as

"well

" well now as formerly: nay, I not only forgive, but " I pray daily for you. But, dear ſiſter, what could " you expect leſs than what hath happened? you ſhould " have believed your friends, who were wiſer and older " than you. I do not here mean myſelf, though I own " I am eleven months and ſome odd weeks your ſupe- " rior; though, had I been younger, I might, per- " haps, have been able to adviſe you: for wiſdom, " and what ſome may call beauty, do not always go " together. You will not be offended at this: for I " know in your heart you have always held your head " above ſome people, whom, perhaps, other people have " thought better of; but why do I mention what I " ſcorn ſo much? No, my dear ſiſter; Heaven forbid it " ſhould ever be ſaid of me, that I value myſelf upon " my face---not but if I could believe men perhaps--- " but I hate and deſpiſe men---you know I do, my " dear, and I wiſh you had deſpiſed them as much; " but *jacta eſt alea*, as the doctor ſays. You are to " make the beſt of your fortune. What fortune I " mean my mamma may pleaſe to give you: for you " know all is in her power. Let me adviſe you then to " bring your mind to your circumſtances, and remem- " ber (for I cannot help writing it, as it is for your " own good) the vapours are a diſtemper which very " ill become a knapſack. Remember, my dear, what " you have done; remember what my mamma hath " done; remember we have ſomething of yours to keep, " and do not conſider yourſelf as an only child----no, " nor as a favourite child; but be pleaſed to remember, " dear ſiſter, your moſt affectionate ſiſter, and

" moſt obedient humble ſervant,

" E. HARRIS."

'O brave Miſs Betty,' cried Miſs Matthews; 'I al- 'ways held her in high eſteem, but I proteſt ſhe exceeds 'even what I could have expected from her.'

'This letter, Madam,' cries Booth, 'you will be- 'lieve, was an excellent cordial for my poor wife's ſpi- 'rits. So dreadful indeed was the effect it had upon

'her, that as she had read it in my absence, I found 'her at my return home in the most violent fits; and 'so long was it before she recovered her senses, that 'I despaired of that blessed event ever happening, and 'my own senses very narrowly escaped from being sa-'crificed to my despair. However she came at last to 'herself, and I began to consider of every means of car-'rying her immediately to Montpelier, which was now 'become much more necessary than before.

'Though I was greatly shocked at the barbarity of 'the letter, yet I apprehended no very ill consequences 'from it; for as it was believed all over the army that 'I had married a great fortune, I had received offers 'of money, if I wanted it, from more than one. In-'deed, I might have easily carried my wife to Montpe-'lier at any time; but she was extremely averse to the 'voyage, being desirous of our returning to England, 'as I had leave to do; and she grew daily so much 'better, that had it not been for the receipt of that 'cursed------which I have just read to you, I am per-'suaded she might have been able to return to England 'in the next ship.

'Among others, there was a colonel in the garrison 'who had not only offered, but importuned me to re-'ceive some money of him: I now therefore repaired to 'him; and as a reason of altering my resolution, I pro-'duced the letter, and at the same time acquainted him 'with the true state of my affairs. The colonel read 'the letter, shook his head, and, after some silence, 'said, he was sorry I had refused to accept his offer be-'fore; but that he had now so ordered matters, and dis-'posed of his money, that he had not a shilling left to 'spare from his own occasions.

'Answers of the same kind I had from several others, 'but not one penny could I borrow of any; for I have 'been since firmly persuaded that the honest colonel was 'not content with denying me himself, but took effec-'tual means, by spreading the secret I had so foolishly 'trusted him with, to prevent me from succeeding else-

'where;

'where: for such is the nature of men, that whoever 'denies himself to do you a favour, is unwilling that it 'should be done to you by any other.

'This was the first time I had ever felt that distress 'which arises from the want of money: a distress very 'dreadful indeed in a married state; for what can be 'more miserable than to see any thing necessary to the 'preservation of a beloved creature, and not be able to 'supply it?

'Perhaps you may wonder, Madam, that I have not 'mentioned Captain James on this occasion; but he 'was at the time laid up at Algiers (whither he had been 'sent by the governor) in a fever. However, he re-'turned time enough to supply me, which he did with 'the utmost readiness, on the very first mention of my di-'stress; and the good colonel, notwithstanding his 'having disposed of his money, discounted the cap-'tain's draft. You see, Madam, an instance in the 'generous behaviour of my friend James, how false are 'all universal satires against human kind. He is in-'deed one of the worthiest men the world ever pro-'duced.

'But, perhaps, you will be more pleased with the 'extravagant generosity of my serjeant. The day be-'fore the return of Mr. James, the poor fellow came to 'me, with tears in his eyes, and begged I would not 'be offended at what he was going to mention. He 'then pulled a purse from his pocket, which contained, 'he said, the sum of twelve pounds, and which he beg-'ged me to accept, crying he was sorry it was not in 'his power to lend me whatever I wanted. I was so 'struck with this instance of generosity and friendship 'in such a person, that I gave him an opportunity of 'pressing me a second time before I made him an an-'swer. Indeed I was greatly surprized how he came 'to be worth that little sum, and no less at his being 'acquainted with my own wants. In both which 'points he presently satisfied me. As to the first, it 'seems, he had plundered a Spanish officer of fifteen

'pistoles; and as to the second, he confessed he had it 'from my wife's maid, who had overheard some dis- 'course between her mistress and me. Indeed people, 'I believe, always deceive themselves, who imagine 'they can conceal distrest circumstances from their ser- 'vants: for these are always extremely quick-sighted 'on such occasions.'

'Good Heaven! cries Miss Matthews, 'how asto- 'nishing is such behaviour in so low a fellow!'

'I thought so myself,' answered Booth! 'and yet I 'know not, on a more strict examination into the mat- 'ter, why we should be more surprized to see greatness 'of mind discover itself in one degree or rank of life, 'than in another. Love, benevolence, or what you 'please to call it, may be the reigning passion in a beg- 'gar as well as in a prince; and whenever it is, its 'energies will be the same.

'To confess the truth, I am afraid we often com- 'pliment what we call upper life, with too much in- 'justice, at the expence of the lower. As it is no rare 'thing to see instances which degrade human nature in 'persons of the highest birth and education; so I ap- 'prehend, that examples of whatever is really great and 'good have been sometimes found amongst those who 'have wanted all such advantages. In reality, palaces, 'I make no doubt, do sometimes contain nothing but 'dreariness and darkness, and the sun of righteousness 'hath shone forth with all its glory in a cottage.'

CHAP. VIII.

The Story of Booth continued.

MR. Booth thus went on:

'We now took leave of the garrison, and ha- 'ving landed at Marseilles, arrived at Montpelier, 'without any thing happening to us worth remem- 'brance, except the extreme sea-sickness of poor 'Amelia; but I was afterwards well repaid for the 'terrors which it occasioned me, by the good conse- 'quences which attended it: for I believe it contri- 'buted, even more than the air of Montpelier, to the 'perfect re-establishment of her health.'

'I ask

'I aſk your pardon for interrupting you,' cries Miſs Matthews, 'but you never ſatisfied me whether 'you took the ſerjeant's money. You have made me 'half in love with that charming fellow.'

'How can you imagine, Madam,' anſwered Booth, 'I ſhould have taken from a poor fellow what was of 'ſo little conſequence to me, and at the ſame time of 'ſo much to him? Perhaps now you will derive this 'from the paſſion of pride.'

'Indeed,' ſays ſhe, 'I neither derive it from the 'paſſion of pride, nor from the paſſion of folly; but 'methinks you ſhould have accepted the offer; and I 'am convinced you hurt him very much when you re-'fuſed it. But pray proceed in your ſtory.' Then Booth went on as follows:

'As Amelia recovered her health and ſpirits dai-'ly, we began to paſs our time very pleaſantly at 'Montpelier: for the greateſt enemy to the French 'will acknowledge, that they are the beſt people in 'the world to live amongſt for a little while. In ſome 'countries it is almoſt as eaſy to get a good eſtate as 'a good acquaintance. In England, particularly, 'acquaintance is of almoſt as ſlow growth as an oak; 'ſo that the age of man ſcarce ſuffices to bring it to 'any perfection, and families ſeldom contract any 'great intimacy till the third, or at leaſt the ſecond 'generation. So ſhy indeed are we Engliſh of letting 'a ſtranger into our houſes, that one would imagine 'we regarded all ſuch as thieves. Now the French 'are the very reverſe. Being a ſtranger among them 'entitles you to the better place, and to the greater 'degree of civility; and if you wear but the appear-'ance of a gentleman, they never ſuſpect you are not 'one. Their friendſhip indeed ſeldom extends ſo far 'as their purſe; nor is ſuch friendſhip uſual in other 'countries. To ſay the truth, politeneſs carries 'friendſhip far enough in the ordinary occaſions of life, 'and thoſe who want this acccompliſhment rarely 'make amends for it by their ſincerity: for bluntneſs,

'or

'or rather rudeneſs, as it commonly deſerves to be 'called, is not always ſo much a mark of honeſty as 'it is taken to be.

'The day after our arrival we became acquainted 'with Monſ. Bagillard. He was a Frenchman of 'great wit and vivacity, with a greater ſhare of learn-'ing than gentlemen are uſually poſſeſſed of. As he 'lodged in the ſame houſe with us, we were immedi-'ately acquainted; and I liked his converſation ſo 'well, that I never thought I had too much of his 'company. Indeed I ſpent ſo much of my time with 'him, that Amelia (I know not whether I ought to 'mention it) grew uneaſy at our familiarity, and com-'plained of my being too little with her, from my vi-'olent fondneſs of my new acquaintance; for our con-'verſation turning chiefly upon books, and principally 'Latin ones, (for we read ſeveral of the claſſics toge-'ther) ſhe could have but little entertainment by be-'ing with us. When my wife had once taken it into 'her head that ſhe was deprived of my company by 'Mr. Bagillard, it was impoſſible to change her opi-'nion; and though I ſpent more of my time with her 'than I had ever done before, ſhe ſtill grew more and 'more diſſatisfied, till ſhe at laſt very earneſtly deſired 'me to quit my lodgings, and inſiſted upon it with 'more vehemence than I had ever known her expreſs 'before. To ſay the truth, if that excellent woman 'could ever be thought unreaſonable, I thought ſhe 'was on this occaſion.

'But in what light ſoever her deſires appeared to 'me, as they manifeſtly aroſe from an affection of 'which I had daily the moſt endearing proofs, I re-'ſolved to comply with her, and accordingly remo-'ved to a diſtant part of the town; for it is my opi-'nion, that we can have but little love for the perſon 'whom we will never indulge in an unreaſonable de-'mand. Indeed, I was under a difficulty in regard 'to Monſ. Bagillard; for as I could not poſſibly 'communicate to him the true reaſon for quitting my

'lodg-

'lodgings, ſo I found it as difficult to deceive him 'by a counterfeit one; beſides I was apprehenſive I 'ſhould have little leſs of his company than before. 'I could, indeed, have avoided this dilemma, by lea-'ving Montpelier; for Amelia had perfectly recover-'ed her health; but I had faithfully promiſed Cap-'tain James to wait his return from Italy, whither 'he was gone ſome time before from Gibralter; nor 'was it proper for Amelia to take any long journey, 'ſhe being now near ſix months gone with child.

'This difficulty, however, proved to be leſs than I 'had imagined it; for my French friend, whether he 'ſuſpected any thing from my wife's behaviour, though 'ſhe never, as I obſerved, ſhewed him the leaſt inci-'vility, became ſuddenly as cold on his ſide. After 'our leaving the lodgings, he never made above two 'or three formal viſits; indeed his time was ſoon af-'ter entirely taken up by an intrigue with a certain 'counteſs, which blazed all over Montpelier.

'We had not been long in our new apartments, be-'fore an Engliſh officer arrived at Montpelier, and 'came to lodge in the ſame houſe with us. This 'gentleman, whoſe name was Bath, was of the 'rank of a Major, and had ſo much ſingularity in 'his character, that, perhaps, you never heard of 'any like him. He was far from having any of 'thoſe bookiſh qualifications, which had before cau-'ſed my Amelia's diſquiet. It is true, his diſcourſe 'generally turned on matters of no feminine kind; 'war and martial exploits being the ordinary topics 'of his converſation: however, as he had a ſiſter 'with whom Amelia was greatly pleaſed, an intima-'cy preſently grew between us, and we four lived in 'one family.

'The major was a great dealer in the marvellous, 'and was conſtantly the little hero of his own tale. 'This made him very entertaining to Amelia, who, 'of all perſons in the world, had the trueſt taſte and 'enjoyment of all the ridiculous; for whilſt no one

'ſooner

'sooner diſcovers it in the character of another, no 'one ſo well conceals her knowledge of it from the ri-'diculous perſon. I cannot help mentioning a ſenti-'ment of her's on this head, as I think it doth her 'great honour: "If I had the ſame contempt," 'ſaid ſhe, "for ridiculous people, with the generality "of the world, I ſhould rather think them the objects "of tears than laughter; but, in reality, I have "known ſeveral who in ſome parts of their characters "have been extremely ridiculous, in others have "been altogether as amiable. For inſtance," ſaid 'ſhe, "here is the major, who tells us of many things "which he has never ſeen, and of others which he has "never done, and both in the moſt extravagant exceſs; "and yet how amiable is his behaviour to his poor "ſiſter, whom he hath not only brought over hither "for her health, at his own expence, but is come to "bear her company!" I believe, Madam, I repeat 'her very words; for I am very apt to remember what 'ſhe ſays.

'You will eaſily believe, from a circumſtance I have 'juſt mentioned in the major's favour, eſpecially when 'I have told you that his ſiſter was one of the beſt of 'girls, that it was entirely neceſſary to hide from her 'all kind of laughter at any part of her brother's beha-'viour. To ſay the truth, this was eaſy enough to do; 'for the poor girl was ſo blinded with love and grati-'tude, and ſo highly honoured and reverenced her bro-'ther, that ſhe had not the leaſt ſuſpicion that there was 'a perſon in the world capable of laughing at him.

'Indeed, I am certain ſhe never made the leaſt diſ-'covery of our ridicule; for I am convinced ſhe would 'have reſented it; for beſides the love ſhe bore her 'brother, ſhe had a little family pride which would 'ſometimes appear. To ſay the truth, if ſhe had any 'fault, it was that of vanity; but ſhe was a very good 'girl upon the whole, and none of us are entirely free 'from faults.'

'You are a good-natured fellow, Will,' anſwered

Miſs

Miſs Mathews; 'but vanity is a fault of the firſt mag-
'nitude in a woman, and often the occaſion of many
'others.'

To this Booth made no anſwer, but continued his ſtory.

'In this company we paſſed two or three months very
'agreably, till the major and I both betook ourſelves
'to our ſeveral nurſeries; my wife being brought to
'bed of a girl, and Miſs Bath confined to her cham-
'ber by a ſurfeit, which had like to have occaſioned
'her death.'

Here Miſs Matthews burſt into a loud laugh, of which when Booth aſked the reaſon, ſhe ſaid ſhe could not forbear, at the thoughts of two ſuch nurſes: 'And
'did you really,' ſays ſhe, 'make your wife's cau-
'dle yourſelf?'

'Indeed, Madam,' ſaid he, 'I did; and do you
'think that ſo very extraordinary?'

'Indeed, I do,' anſwered ſhe; 'I thought the beſt
'huſbands had looked on their wives lying-in as a time
'of feſtival and jollity. What, did you not even get
'drunk in the time of your wife's delivery; tell me
'honeſtly how you employed yourſelf at this time?'

'Why then, honeſtly,' replied he, 'and in defiance
'of your laughter, I lay behind her bolſter, and ſup-
'ported her in my arms; and upon my ſoul, I believe
'I felt more pain in my mind than ſhe underwent in her
'body. And now anſwer me as honeſtly: do you
'really think it a proper time for mirth, when the crea-
'ture one loves to diſtraction is undergoing the moſt
'racking torments, as well as in the moſt imminent
'dangers? and---but I need not expreſs any more ten-
'der circumſtances.'

'I am to anſwer honeſtly,' cried ſhe. 'Yes, and
'ſincerely,' cries Booth. 'Why then, honeſtly and
'ſincerely,' ſays ſhe, 'may I never ſee Heaven, if I
'don't think you are an angel of a man.'

'Nay, Madam,' anſwered Booth---but, indeed,
'you do me too much honour; there are many ſuch

'huſ-

'husbands;---nay, have we not an example of the like 'tenderneſs in the major? though as to him, I believe, 'I ſhall make you laugh. While my wife lay in, 'Miſs Bath being extremely ill, I went one day to the 'door of her apartment, to enquire after her health, 'as well as for the major, whom I had not ſeen during 'a whole week. I knocked ſoftly at the door, and 'being bid to open it, I found the major in his ſiſter's 'antichamber warming her poſſet. His dreſs was 'certainly whimſical enough, having on a woman's bed-'gown, and a very dirty flannel night-cap, which be-'ing added to a very odd perſon, (for he is a very 'aukward thin man near ſeven feet high) might 'have formed, in the opinion of moſt men, a very 'proper object of laughter. The major ſtarted from 'his ſeat at my entering into the room, and with 'much emotion, and a great oath, cried out, "Is it "you, Sir?" I then enquired after his and his ſiſter's 'health. He anſwered, that his ſiſter was better, and he 'was very well: "though I did not expect, Sir," 'cried he, with not a little confuſion, "to be ſeen by "you in this ſituation." I told him, I thought it im-'poſſible he could appear in a ſituation more becoming 'his character. "You do not?" anſwered he. "By G---I am very much obliged to you for that opi-"nion; but I believe, Sir, however my weakneſs may "prevail on me to deſcend from it, no man can be "more conſcious of his own dignity than myſelf." 'His ſiſter then called to him from the inner room; 'upon which he rang the bell for her ſervant, and 'then after a ſtride or two acroſs the room, he ſaid, 'with an elated aſpect, "I would not have you think, "Mr. Booth, becauſe you have caught me in this diſ-"habille, by coming upon me a little too abruptly, "I cannot help ſaying a little too abruptly, that I am "my ſiſter's nurſe. I know better what is due to the "dignity of a man, and I have ſhewn it in a line of "battle. I think I have made a figure there, "Mr. Booth, and becoming my character; by G---

"I

R. Corbould, del. Engraved for C. Cooke, Paternoster Row, October 5. 1793. J. Maple, sc.

2 JY 58

" I ought not to be deſpiſed too much, if my nature " is not totally without it's weakneſſes." He uttered ' this, and ſome more of the ſame kind, with great ' majeſty, or, as he called it, dignity. Indeed, he ' uſed ſome hard words that I did not underſtand; for ' all his words are not to be found in a dictionary. ' Upon the whole I could not eaſily refrain from laugh- ' ter; however, I conquered myſelf, and ſoon after ' retired from him, aſtoniſhed that it was poſſible for ' a man to poſſeſs true goodneſs, and be, at the ſame ' time, aſhamed of it.

' But if I was ſurprized at what had paſt at this vi- ' ſit, how much more was I ſurprized the next morn- ' ing, when he came very early to my chamber, and ' told me, he had not been able to ſleep one wink at ' what had paſt between us! " There were ſome words " of yours," ſaid he, " which muſt be farther explain- " ed before we part. You told me, Sir, when you " found me in that ſituation, which I cannot bear to " recollect, that you thought I could not appear in " one more becoming my character; theſe were the " words, I ſhall never forget them. Do you imagine " that there is any of the dignity of a man wanting " in my character; do you think that I have, during " my ſiſter's illneſs, behaved with a weakneſs that ſa- " vours too much of effeminacy? I know how much " it is beneath a man to whine and whimper about a " trifling girl as well as you, or any man; and if my " ſiſter had died, I ſhould have behaved like a man on " the occaſion. I would not have you think I confi- " ned myſelf from company merely upon her account. " I was very much diſordered myſelf. And when you " ſurprized me in that ſituation, I repeat again, in " that ſituation, her nurſe had not left the room three " minutes, and I was blowing the fire for fear it ſhould " have gone out." In this manner he ran on almoſt a ' quarter of an hour, before he would ſuffer me to ſpeak. ' At laſt, looking ſtedfaſtly in his face, I aſked him if ' I muſt conclude that he was in earneſt. " In earn-

" eſt," ſays he, repeating my words, " do you then " take my character for a jeſt?"---" Look'e, Sir," ' ſaid I, very gravely, " I think we know one another " very well; and I have no reaſon to ſuſpect you " ſhould impute it to fear, when I tell you, I was ſo " far from intending to affront you, that I meant you " one of the higheſt compliments. Tenderneſs for wo- " men is ſo far from leſſening, that it proves the true " manly character. The manly Brutus ſhewed the " utmoſt tenderneſs to his Portia; and the great king " of Sweden, the braveſt, and even fierceſt of men, " ſhut himſelf up three whole days in the midſt of a " campaign, and would ſee no company on the death " of a favourite ſiſter." At theſe words, I ſaw his ' features ſoften; and he cried out, " D---n me, I ad- " mire the king of Sweden of all the men in the world; " and he is a raſcal that is aſhamed of doing any thing " which the king of Sweden did. And yet if any " king of Sweden in France was to tell me that his " ſiſter had more merit than mine, by G-----, I'd " knock his brains about his ears. Poor little Betſey! " ſhe is the honeſteſt, worthieſt, girl that ever was " born. Heaven be praiſed, ſhe is recovered! for, if " I had loſt her, I never ſhould have enjoyed another " happy moment." In this manner he ran on ſome ' time, till the the tears began to overflow; which, ' when he perceived, he ſtopt---perhaps he was unable ' to go on; for he ſeemed almoſt choaked---after a ' ſhort ſilence, however, having wiped his eyes with ' his handkerchief, he fetched a deep ſigh, and cried, " I am aſhamed you ſhould ſee this, Mr. Booth; but " d---n me, nature will get the better of dignity." ' I now comforted him with the example of Xerxes, ' as I had before done with that of the king of Swe- ' den; and ſoon after we ſat down to breakfaſt to- ' gether with much cordial friendſhip: for I aſſure ' you, with all his oddity, there is not a better na- ' tured man in the world than the major.

' Good natured, indeed!" cried Miſs Matthews, with

with great ſcorn. 'A fool! how can you mention 'ſuch a fellow with commendation?'

Booth ſpoke as much as he could in defence of his friend; indeed he had repreſented him in as favourable a light as poſſible, and had particularly left out thoſe hard words, with which, as he hath obſerved a little before, the major interlarded his diſcourſe. Booth then proceeded as in the next chapter.

CHAP. IX.

Containing very extraordinary Matters.

'MISS Bath,' continued Booth, 'now recovered ſo 'faſt, that ſhe was abroad as ſoon as my wife. 'Our little party *quarree* began to grow agreeable 'again; and we mixed with the company of the place 'more than we had done before. Monſieur Bagillard 'now again renewed his intimacy; for the counteſs his 'miſtreſs was gone to Paris. At which my wife at firſt 'ſhewed no diſſatisfaction; and I imagined, that as ſhe 'had a friend and companion of her own ſex, (for Miſs 'Bath and ſhe had contracted the higheſt fondneſs for 'each other) ſhe would the leſs miſs my company. 'However, I was diſappointed in this expectation; for 'ſhe ſoon began to expreſs her former uneaſineſs, and her 'impatience for the arrival of Captain James, that we 'might entirely quit Montpelier.

'I could not avoid conceiving ſome little diſpleaſure 'at this humour of my wife, which I was forced to 'think a little unreaſonable.'---'A little do you call it,' ſays Miſs Matthews; 'Good heavens! what a huſband 'are you!'---'How little worthy,' anſwered he, 'as you 'will ſay hereafter, of ſuch a wife as my Amelia! One 'day as we were ſitting together, I heard a violent 'ſcream; upon which my wife ſtarting up, cried out, "Sure that's Miſs Bath's voice!" and immediately ran 'towards the chamber whence it proceeded. I followed 'her; and when we arrived, we there beheld the moſt 'ſhocking ſight imaginable; Miſs Bath lying dead on 'the floor, and the major all bloody kneeling by her, 'and roaring out for aſſiſtance. Amelia, though ſhe

'was herſelf in a little better condition than her friend, 'ran haſtily to her, bared her neck, and attempted to 'looſen her ſtays, while I ran up and down, ſcarce 'knowing what I did, calling for water and cordials, 'and diſpatching ſeveral ſervants one after another for 'doctors and ſurgeons.

'Water, cordials, and all neceſſary implements being 'brought, Miſs Bath was at length recovered, and pla-'ced in her chair, when the major ſeated himſelf by her. 'And now the young lady being reſtored to life, the 'major, who, till then, had engaged as little of his own, 'as of any other perſon's attention, became the object of 'all our conſiderations, eſpecially his poor ſiſter's; who 'had no ſooner recovered ſufficient ſtrength, than ſhe 'began to lament her brother, crying out that he was 'killed; and bitterly bewailing her fate, in having re-'vived from her ſwoon to behold ſo dreadful a ſpectacle. 'While Amelia applied herſelf ſo ſooth the agonies of 'her friend, I began to enquire into the condition of 'the major; in which I was aſſiſted by a ſurgeon, 'who now arrived. The major declared with great 'chearfulneſs, that he did not apprehend his wound to 'be in the leaſt dangerous, and therefore begged his 'ſiſter to be comforted, ſaying, he was convinced the 'ſurgeon would ſoon give her the ſame aſſurance; but 'that good man was not ſo liberal of aſſurances as the 'major had expected; for as ſoon as he had probed the 'wound, he afforded no more than hopes, declaring that 'it was a very ugly wound; but added, by way of con-'ſolation, that he had cured many much worſe.

'When the major was dreſt, his ſiſter ſeemed to poſ-'ſeſs his whole thoughts, and all his care was to relieve 'her grief. He ſolemnly proteſted, that it was no more 'than a fleſh wound, and not very deep, nor could, as 'he apprehended, be in the leaſt dangerous; and as for 'the cold expreſſions of the ſurgeon, he very well ac-'counted for them from a motive too obvious to be 'mentioned. From theſe declarations of her brother, 'and the interpoſition of her friends; and above all, I

'believe,

'believe, from that vaſt vent which ſhe had given to her 'fright, Miſs Bath ſeemed a little pacified; Amelia 'therefore at laſt prevailed; and as terror abated, curio-'ſity became the ſuperior paſſion. I therefore now 'began to enquire what had occaſioned that accident, 'whence all the uproar aroſe.

'The major took me by the hand, and looking very 'kindly at me, ſaid, "My dear Mr. Booth, I muſt "begin by aſking your pardon; for I have done you an "injury, for which nothing but the height of friend-"ſhip in me can be an excuſe; and therefore nothing "but the heighth of friendſhip in you can forgive." 'This preamble, Madam, you will eaſily believe, great-'ly alarmed all the company, but eſpecially me. I 'anſwered, "Dear major, I forgive you, let it be what "it will; but what is it poſſible you can have done to "injure me?"---"That," replied he, "which I am "convinced a man of your honour and dignity of na-"ture, by G---, muſt conclude to be one of the higheſt "injuries. I have taken out of your own hands the "doing of yourſelf juſtice. I am afraid I have killed "the man who hath injured your honour. I mean, "that villain Bagillard---but I cannot proceed; for you, "Madam," ſaid he to my wife, "are concerned; and "I know what is due to the dignity of your ſex." 'Amelia, I obſerved, turned pale at theſe words, but 'eagerly begged him to proceed. "Nay, Madam," anſwered he, "if I am commanded by a lady, it is a "part of my dignity to obey." He then proceeded to 'tell us, that Bagillard had rallied him, upon a ſup-'poſition that he was purſuing my wife with a view of 'gallantry; telling him that he could never ſucceed; 'giving hints, that if it had been poſſible, he ſhould 'have ſucceeded himſelf; and ended with calling my 'poor Amelia an accompliſhed prude; upon which the 'major gave Bagillard a box on the ear, and both im-'mediately drew their ſwords.

'The major had ſcarce ended his ſpeech, when a ſer-'vant came into the room, and told me there was a friar

'below who desired to speak with me in great haste. I 'shook the major by the hand, and told him I not only 'forgave him, but was extremely obliged to his friend-'ship; and then going to the friar, I found that he was 'Bagillard's confessor, from whom he came to me, with 'an earnest desire of seeing me, that he might ask my 'pardon, and receive my forgiveness before he died, for 'the injury he had intended me. My wife at first op-'posed my going, from some sudden fears on my ac-'count; but when she was convinced they were ground-'less, she consented.

'I found Bagillard in his bed; for the major's sword 'had passed up to the very hilt through his body. 'After having very earnestly asked my pardon, he made 'me many compliments on the possession of a woman 'who, joined to the most exquisite beauty, was mistress 'of the most impregnable virtue; as a proof of which, 'he acknowledged the vehemence as well as ill success 'of his attempts; and to make Amelia's virtue appear 'the brighter, his vanity was so predominant, he could 'not forbear running over the names of several women 'of fashion who had yielded to his passion, which he 'said, had never raged so violently for any other as for 'my poor Amelia; and that this violence, which he had 'found wholly unconquerable, he hoped would procure 'his pardon at my hands. It is unnecessary to men-'tion what I said on the occasion. I assured him of my 'entire forgiveness; and so we parted. To say the 'truth, I afterwards thought myself almost obliged to 'him for a meeting with Amelia, the most luxuriously 'delicate that can be imagined.

'I now ran to my wife, whom I embraced with rap-'tures of love and tenderness. When the first torrent 'of these was a little abated, "Confess to me, my dear," 'said she, "could your goodness prevent you from think-"ing me a little unreasonable in expressing so much "uneasiness at the loss of your company, while I ought "to have rejoiced in the thoughts of your being so well "entertained? I know you must; and then consider

"what

"what I muſt have felt, while I knew I was daily "leſſening myſelf in your eſteem, and forced into a con- "duct, which I was ſenſible muſt appear to you, who "was ignorant of my motive, to be mean, vulgar, and "ſelfiſh. And yet what other courſe had I to take, with "a man whom no denial, no ſcorn could abaſh? But if "this was a cruel taſk, how much more wretched ſtill "was the conſtraint I was obliged to wear in his pre- "ſence before you, to ſhew outward civility to the man "whom my ſoul deteſted, for fear of any fatal conſe- "quence from your ſuſpicion; and this too, while I was "afraid he would conſtrue it to be an encouragement. "Do you not pity your poor Amelia, when you reflect "on her ſituation?"---"Pity," cried I, "my love! is "pity an adequate expreſſion for eſteem, for adoration? "But how, my love, could he carry this on ſo ſecretly--- "by letters?"---"O no, he offered me many; but I "never would receive but one, and that I returned him. "Good God! I would not have ſuch a letter in my "poſſeſſion for the univerſe; I thought my eyes con- "taminated with reading it!" 'O brave,' cried Miſs Matthews: 'heroic, I proteſt.

'Had I a wiſh that did not bear
'The ſtamp and image of my dear,
'I'd pierce my heart thro' every vein,
'And die to let it out again.'

'And can you really,' cried he, 'laugh at ſo much 'tenderneſs?'---'I laugh at tenderneſs! O Mr. Booth,' anſwered ſhe, 'thou knoweſt but little of Caliſta.'--- 'I thought formerly,' cried he, 'I knew a great deal, 'and thought you, of all women in the world, to have 'the greateſt------,' 'Of all women!---take care, 'Mr. Booth,' ſaid ſhe. 'By Heaven, if you thought ſo, 'you thought truly---But what is the object of my 'tenderneſs, ſuch an object as---' 'Well, Madam,' ſays he, 'I hope you will find one.'---'I thank you for 'that hope, however,' ſays ſhe, 'cold as it is; but pray 'go on with your ſtory;' which command he im- mediately obeyed.

CHAP.

CHAP. X.

Containing a Letter of a very curious Kind.

'THE major's wound,' continued Booth, 'was really 'as slight as he believed it; so that in a few days 'he was perfectly well; nor was Bagillard, though run 'through the body, long apprehended to be in any dan-'ger of his life. The major then took me aside, and 'wishing me heartily joy of Bagillard's recovery, told 'me I should now, by the gift (as it were) of Heaven, 'have an opportunity of doing myself justice. I an-'swered, I could not think of any such thing: for that 'when I imagined he was on his death-bed, I had 'heartily and sincerely forgiven him. "Very right," 'replied the major, "and consistent with your honour, "when he was on his death-bed, but that forgiveness "was only conditional, and is revoked by his recovery." 'I told him I could not possibly revoke it; for that my 'anger was really gone. "What hath anger," cried he, "to do with the matter? the dignity of my nature hath "been always my reason for drawing my sword; and "when that is concerned, I can as readily fight with "the man I love, as with the man I hate." I will not 'tire you with the repetition of the whole argument, 'in which the major did not prevail; and I really be-'lieve I sunk a little in his esteem upon that account, 'till Captain James, who arrived soon after, again per-'fectly reinstated me in his favour.

'When the captain was come, there remained no 'cause of our longer stay at Montpelier; for as to my 'wife, she was in a better state of health than I ever had 'known her; and Miss Bath had not only recovered her 'health, but her bloom; and from a pale skeleton, was 'become a plump, handsome, young woman. James 'was again my cashier; for, far from receiving any 'remittance, it was now a long time since I had re-'ceived any letter from England, though both myself 'and my dear Amelia had written several, both to my 'mother and sister; and now, at our departure from 'Montpelier, I bethought myself of writing to my good

'friend

'friend the doctor, acquainting him with our journey to 'Paris, whither I desired he would direct his answer.

'At Paris we all arrived, without encountering any 'adventure on the road worth relating; nor did any 'thing of consequence happen here during the first fort-'night: for as you know neither Captain James nor 'Miss Bath, it is scarce worth telling you, that an affec-'tion, which afterwards ended in a marriage, began now 'to appear between them, in which it may appear odd to 'you that I made the first discovery of the lady's flame, 'and my wife of the captain's.

'The seventeenth day after our arrival at Paris, I 'received a letter from the doctor, which I have in my 'pocket-book; and, if you please, I will read it to you; 'for I would not willingly do any injury to his words.'

The lady, you may easily belive, desired to hear the letter; and Booth read it as follows.

"MY DEAR CHILDREN,

"FOR I will now call you so, as you have neither of "you now any other parent in the world. Of this "melancholy news I should have sent you earlier notice, "if I had thought you ignorant of it, or indeed if I had "known whither to have written. If your sister hath "received any letters from you, she hath kept them a "secret, and perhaps, out of affection to you, hath re-"posited them in the same place where she keeps her "goodness, and, what I am afraid is much dearer "to her, her money. The reports concerning you have "been various; so is always the case in matters where "men are ignorant; for when no man knows what the "truth is, every man thinks himself at liberty to report "what he pleases. Those who wish you well, son "Booth, say simply that you are dead; others, that you "ran away from the siege, and was cashiered. As for "my daughter, all agree that she is a saint above; and "there are not wanting those who hint that her husband "sent her thither. From this beginning, you will ex-"pect, I suppose, better news than I am going to tell

"you;

" you; but pray, my dear children, why may not I,
" who have always laughed at my own afflictions,
" laugh at yours, without the cenſure of much malevo-
" lence? I wiſh you could learn this temper from me;
" for, take my word for it, nothing truer ever came from
" the mouth of a heathen, than that ſentence---

" *Leve fit quod bene fertur onus**."

" And though I muſt confeſs, I ever thought Ariſtotle
" (whom I do not take for ſo great a blockhead as ſome
" who have never read him) doth not very well reſolve
" the doubt which he hath raiſed in his Ethicks, viz.
" How a man, in the midſt of King Priam's misfor-
" tunes, can be called happy? Yet I have long thought
" that there is no calamity ſo great, that a Chriſtian
" philoſopher may not reaſonably laugh at it. If the
" heathen Cicero, doubting of immortality, (for ſo wiſe
" a man muſt have doubted of that which had ſuch ſlen-
" der arguments to ſupport it) could aſſert it as the
" office of wiſdom, *Humanas res deſpicere atque infra ſe
" poſitas arbitrari**.

" Which paſſage, with much more to the ſame pur-
" poſe, you will find in the third book of his Tuſ-
" culan Queſtions.

" With how much greater confidence may a good
" Chriſtian deſpiſe, and even deride, all temporary and
" ſhort tranſitory evils! If the poor wretch, who is
" trudging on to his miſerable cottage, can laugh at the
" ſtorms and tempeſts, the rain and whirlwinds which
" ſurround him, while his richeſt hope is only that of
" reſt; how much more chearfully muſt a man paſs
" through ſuch tranſient evils, whoſe ſpirits are buoyed
" up with the certain expectation of finding a noble pa-
" lace, and the moſt ſumptuous entertainment ready to
" receive him? I do not much like the ſimile; but I
" cannot think of a better. And yet, inadequate as the

* The burden becomes light by being well borne.

† To look down on all human affairs as matters below his conſideration.

" ſimile

"ſimile is, we may, I think, from the actions of man-
"kind, conclude that they will conſider it as much too
"ſtrong; for in the caſe I have put of the entertainment,
"is there any man ſo tender or poor-ſpirited as not to
"deſpiſe and often to deride the fierceſt of thoſe incle-
"mencies which I have mentioned? But in our jour-
"ney to the glorious manſions of everlaſting bliſs, how
"ſeverely is every little rub, every trifling accident,
"lamented! and if Fortune ſhowers down any of her
"heavier ſtorms upon us, how wretched do we pre-
"ſently appear to ourſelves and to others! The reaſon
"of this can be no other than that we are not in earneſt
"in our faith; at the beſt, we think with too little at-
"tention on this our great concern. While the moſt
"paltry matters of this world, even thoſe pitiful trifles,
"thoſe childiſh gewgaws, riches and honours, are tranſ-
"acted with the utmoſt eagerneſs, and moſt ſerious
"application, the grand weighty affair of immortality
"is poſtponed and diſregarded, nor ever brought into
"the leaſt competition with our affairs here. If one of
"my cloth ſhould begin a diſcourſe of heaven in the
"ſcenes of buſineſs or pleaſure, in the Court of Requeſts,
"at Garraway's, or at White's, would he gain a hear-
"ing, unleſs, perhaps, of ſome ſorry jeſter who would
"deſire to ridicule him? would he not preſently acquire
"the name of the Mad Parſon, and be thought by all
"men worthy of Bedlam? or would he not be treated
"as the Romans treated their Aretalogi *, and con-
"ſidered in the light of a buffoon? But why ſhould I
"mention thoſe places of hurry and worldly purſuit!
"what attention do we engage even in the pulpit?
"Here, if a ſermon be prolonged a little beyond the
"uſual hour, doth it not ſet half the audience aſleep?
"as I queſtion not I have by this time both my chil-
"dren. Well, then, like a good-natured ſurgeon, who
"prepares his patient for a painful operation, by endea-

* A ſet of beggarly philoſophers, who diverted great men at their tables with burleſque diſcourſes on virtue.

"vouring

" vouring as much as he can to deaden his ſenſation, I
" will now communicate to you, in your ſlumbering
" condition, the news with which I threatened you.
" Your good mother, you are to know, is dead at laſt,
" and hath left her whole fortune to her elder daughter.
" This is all the ill news I have to tell you. Confeſs
" now, if you are awake, did you not expect it was
" much worſe? did you not apprehend that your charm-
" ing child was dead! Far from it; he is in perfect
" health, and the admiration of every body: what is
" more, he will be taken care of, with the tenderneſs of
" a parent, till your return. What pleaſure muſt this
" give you! if indeed any thing can add to to the hap-
" pineſs of a married couple, who are extremely and
" deſervedly fond of each other, and, as you write me,
" in perfect health. A ſuperſtitious heathen would
" have dreaded the malice of Nemeſis in your ſituation;
" but as I am a Chriſtian, I ſhall venture to add ano-
" ther circumſtance to your felicity, by aſſuring you
" that you have, beſides your wife, a faithful and zea-
" lous friend. Do not, therefore, my dear children,
" fall into that fault which the excellent Thucydides
" obſerves is too common in human nature, to bear
" heavily the being deprived of the ſmaller good, with-
" out conceiving, at the ſame time, any gratitude for
" the much greater bleſſings which we are ſuffered to
" enjoy. I have only farther to tell you, my ſon, that
" when you call at Mr. Morand's, Rue Dauphiné, you
" will find yourſelf worth a hundred pounds. Good
" Heaven! how much richer are you than millions of
" people who are in want of nothing! Farewel, and
" know me for your ſincere and affectionate friend."

'There, Madam,' cries Booth, 'how do you like
'the letter?'

'Oh, extremely!' anſwered ſhe: the doctor is a
'charming man; I always loved dearly to hear him
'preach. I remember to have heard of Mrs. Harris's
'death above a year before I left the country; but never

'knew

'knew the particulars of her will before. I am ex-
'tremely ſorry for it, upon my honour!'.

'Oh, fye! Madam,' cries Booth, have you ſo ſoon
'forgot the chief purport of the doctor's letter?'

'Aye, aye,' cried ſhe; 'theſe are very pretty things
'to read, I acknowledge: but the loſs of fortune is a
'ſerious matter; and I am ſure a man of Mr. Booth's
'underſtanding muſt think ſo.'---'One conſideration, I
'muſt own, Madam,' anſwered he, 'a good deal baffled
'all the doctor's arguments. This was the concern
'for my little growing family, who muſt one day feel
'the loſs; nor was I ſo eaſy upon Amelia's account as
'upon my own, though ſhe herſelf put on the utmoſt
'chearfulneſs, and ſtretched her invention to the utmoſt
'to comfort me. But ſure, Madam, there is ſomething
'in the doctor's letter to admire beyond the philoſophy
'of it: what think you of that eaſy, generous, friendly
'manner, in which he ſent me the hundred pounds?'

'Very noble and great indeed!' replied ſhe: 'but go
'on with your ſtory; for I long to hear the whole.'

CHAP. XI.

In which Mr. Booth relates his Return to England.

'NOTHING remarkable, as I remember, happened
'during our ſtay at Paris, which we left ſoon
'after, and came to London. Here we reſted only two
'days; and then, taking leave of our fellow-travellers,
'we ſet out for Wiltſhire, my wife being ſo impatient
'to ſee the child which ſhe had left behind her, that the
'child ſhe carried with her was almoſt killed with the
'fatigue of the journey.

'We arrived at our inn late in the evening. Amelia,
'though ſhe had no great reaſon to be pleaſed with any
'part of her ſiſter's behaviour, reſolved to behave to her
'as if nothing wrong had ever happened. She therefore
'ſent a kind note to her the moment of our arrival, giv-
'ing her her option whether ſhe would come to us at the
'inn, or whether we ſhould that evening wait on her.
'The ſervant, after waiting an hour, brought us an

'anſwer, excuſing her from coming to us ſo late, as ſhe 'was diſordered with a cold, and deſiring my wife by no 'means to think of venturing out after the fatigue of 'her journey; ſaying, ſhe would, on that account, defer 'the great pleaſure of ſeeing her till the morning; with-'out taking any more notice of your humble ſervant, 'than if no ſuch perſon had been in the world, though I 'had very civilly ſent my compliments to her. I ſhould 'not mention this trifle, if it was not to ſhew you the 'nature of the woman, and that it will be a kind of key 'to her future conduct.

'When the ſervant returned, the good doctor, who 'had been with us almoſt all the time of his abſence, 'hurried us away to his houſe, where we preſently found 'a ſupper and a bed prepared for us. My wife was 'eagerly deſirous to ſee her child that night; but the 'doctor would not ſuffer it; and as he was at nurſe at a 'diſtant part of the town, and the doctor aſſured her he 'had ſeen him in perfect health that evening, ſhe ſuf-'fered herſelf at laſt to be diſſuaded.

'We ſpent that evening in the moſt agreeable manner: 'for the doctor's wit and humour, joined to the higheſt 'chearfulneſs and good-nature, made him the moſt 'agreeable companion in the world: and he was now 'in the higheſt ſpirits, which he was pleaſed to place to 'our account. We ſat together to a very late hour: 'for ſo excellent is my wife's conſtitution, that ſhe de-'clared ſhe was ſcarce ſenſible of any fatigue from her 'late journies.

'Amelia ſlept not a wink all night, and in the morn-'ing early the doctor accompanied us to the little in-'fant. The tranſports we felt on this occaſion were 'really enchanting; nor can any but a fond parent con-'ceive, I am certain, the leaſt idea of them. Our 'imaginations ſuggeſted an hundred agreeable circum-'ſtances, none of which had, perhaps, any foundation. 'We ma'e words and meaning out of every ſound, and 'in every feature I found out ſome reſemblance to my 'Amelia, as ſhe did to me.

'But

'But I aſk your pardon for dwelling on ſuch inci-
'dents; and will proceed to ſcenes which, to moſt per-
'ſons, will be more entertaining.

'We went hence to pay a viſit to Miſs Harris, whoſe
'reception of us, was, I think, truly ridiculous; and,
'as you know the lady, I will endeavour to deſcribe it
'particularly. At our firſt arrival we were uſhered
'into a parlour, where we were ſuffered to wait almoſt
'an hour. At length the lady of the houſe appeared
'in deep mourning, with a face, if poſſible, more diſ-
'mal than her dreſs, in which, however, there was
'every appearance of art. Her features were indeed
'ſcrewed up to the very height of grief. With this
'face, and in the moſt ſolemn gait, ſhe approached
'Amelia, and coldly ſaluted her. After which, ſhe
'made me a very diſtant formal curtſey, and we all ſat
'down. A ſhort ſilence now enſued, which Miſs Har-
'ris at length broke with a deep ſigh, and ſaid, "Siſ-
"ter, here is a great alteration in this place ſince you
"ſaw it laſt; Heaven hath been pleaſed to take my
"poor mother to itſelf!" (Here ſhe wiped her eyes,
'and then continued) "I hope I know my duty, and
"have learned a proper reſignation to the Divine Will;
"but ſomething is to be allowed to grief for the beſt
"of mothers; for ſo ſhe was to us both; and if at laſt
"ſhe made any diſtinction, ſhe muſt have had her rea-
"ſons for ſo doing. I am ſure I can truly ſay I never
"wiſhed, much leſs deſired it." The tears now ſtood
'in poor Amelia's eyes; indeed ſhe had paid too many
'already to the memory of ſo unnatural a parent. She
'anſwered with the ſweetneſs of an angel, that ſhe was
'far from blaming her ſiſter's emotions on ſo tender an
'occaſion; that ſhe heartily joined with her in her
'grief: for that nothing which her mother had done
'in the latter part of her life could efface the remem-
'brance of that tenderneſs which ſhe had formerly
'ſhewn her. Her ſiſter caught hold of the word efface,
'and rung the changes upon it. "Efface!" cried

' ſhe; " O Miſs Emily! (for you muſt not expect me
" to repeat names that will be for ever odious) I wiſh,
" indeed, every thing could be effaced. Effaced! O
" that that was poſſible; we might then have ſtill en-
" joyed my poor mother; for I am convinced ſhe never
" recovered her grief on a certain occaſion." Thus ſhe
' ran on; and after many bitter ſtrokes upon her ſiſter,
' at laſt directly charged her mother's death on my mar-
' riage with Amelia. I could be ſilent then no longer.
' I reminded her of the perfect reconciliation between us
' before my departure, and the great fondneſs which ſhe
' expreſſed for me; nor could I help ſaying in very plain
' terms, that if ſhe had ever changed her opinion of me,
' as I was not conſcious of having deſerved ſuch a
' change by my own behaviour, I was well convinced
' to whoſe good offices I owed it! Guilt hath very quick
' ears to an accuſation. Miſs Harris immediately an-
' ſwered to the charge. She ſaid, ſuch ſuſpicions were
' no more than ſhe expected; that they were of a piece
' with every other part of my conduct, and gave her
' one conſolation, that they ſerved to account for her
' ſiſter Emily's unkindneſs, as well to herſelf as to her
' poor deceaſed mother, and in ſome meaſure leſſened the
' guilt of it with regard to her, ſince it was not eaſy to
' know how far a woman is in the power of her huſ-
' band. My dear Amelia reddened at this reflection on
' me; and begged her ſiſter to name any ſingle inſtance
' of unkindneſs or diſreſpect, in which ſhe had ever of-
' fended. To this the other anſwered, (I am ſure I re-
' peat her words, though I cannot mimick either the
' voice or air with which they were ſpoken) " Pray,
" Miſs Emily, which is to be the judge; yourſelf or
" that gentleman? I remember the time when I could
" have truſted your judgment in any affair; but you
" are now no longer miſtreſs of yourſelf, and are not
" anſwerable for your actions. Indeed, it is my con-
" ſtant prayer that your actions may not be imputed to
" you. It was the conſtant prayer of that bleſſed wo-

' man,

" man, my dear mother, who is now a ſaint above; a " ſaint whoſe name I can never mention without a tear, " though I find you can hear it without one. I cannot " help obſerving ſome concern on ſo melancholy an oc- " caſion; it ſeems due to decency; but, perhaps, (for " I always wiſh to excuſe you) you are forbid to cry."

'The idea of being bid or forbid to cry, ſtruck ſo 'ſtrongly on my fancy, that indignation only could 'have prevented me from laughing. But my narra- 'tive, I am afraid, begins to grow tedious. In ſhort, 'after hearing, for near an hour, every malicious inſi- 'nuation which a fertile genius could invent, we took 'our leave, and ſeparated, as perſons who would never 'willingly meet again.

'The next morning after this interview, Amelia re- 'ceived a long letter from Miſs Harris; in which, after 'many bitter invectives againſt me, ſhe excuſed her 'mother, alledging that ſhe had been driven to do as 'ſhe did, in order to prevent Amelia's ruin, if her for- 'tune had fallen into my hands. She likewiſe very re- 'motely hinted, that ſhe would be only a truſtee for 'her ſiſter's children, and told her, that on one condi- 'tion only ſhe would conſent to live with her as a ſiſter; 'this was, if ſhe could by any means be ſeparated from 'that man, as ſhe was pleaſed to call me, who had 'cauſed ſo much miſchief in the family.

'I was ſo enraged at this uſage, that had not Ame- 'lia intervened, I believe I ſhould have applied to a 'magiſtrate for a ſearch-warrant for that picture, which 'there was ſo much reaſon to ſuſpect ſhe had ſtolen; 'and which, I am convinced, upon a ſearch, we ſhould 'have found in her poſſeſſion.'

'Nay, it is poſſible enough,' cries Miſs Matthews; 'for I believe there is no wickedneſs of which the lady 'is not capable.'

'This agreeable letter was ſucceeded by another of 'the like comfortable kind, which informed me that 'the company in which I was, being an additional one

'raiſed in the beginning of the war, was reduced; ſo 'that I was now a lieutenant on half-pay.

'Whilſt we were meditating on our preſent ſituation, 'the doctor came to us. When we related to him the 'manner in which my ſiſter had treated us, he cried 'out, "Poor ſoul! I pity her heartily:" for this is 'the ſevereſt reſentment he ever expreſſes; indeed, I 'have often heard him ſay, that a wicked ſoul is the 'greateſt object of compaſſion in the world.' A ſentiment which we ſhall leave the reader a little time to digeſt.

CHAP. XII.

In which Mr. Booth concludes his Story.

'THE next day the doctor ſet out for his parſonage, 'which was thirty miles diſtant, whither Amelia 'and myſelf accompanied him, and where we ſtayed 'with him all the time of his reſidence there, being al-'moſt three months.

'The ſituation of the pariſh under my good friend's 'care is very pleaſant. It is placed among meadows, 'waſhed by a clear trout ſtream, and flanked on both 'ſides with downs. His houſe, indeed, would not 'much attract the admiration of the virtuoſo. He built 'it himſelf, and it is remarkable only for its plainneſs, 'with which the furniture ſo well agrees, that there is 'no one thing in it that may not be abſolutely neceſſary, 'except books, and the prints of Mr. Hogarth, whom 'he calls a moral ſatiriſt.

'Nothing, however, can be imagined more agreeable 'than the life that the doctor leads in this homely houſe, 'which he calls his earthly paradiſe.

'All his pariſhioners, whom he treats as his 'children, regard him as their common father. Once 'in a week he conſtantly viſits every houſe in the 'pariſh; examines, commends, and rebukes, as he 'finds occaſion. This is practiſed likewiſe by his 'curate in his abſence; and ſo good an effect is 'produced by this their care, that no quarrels ever

'proceed

'proceed either to blows or law-ſuits; no beggar is to 'be found in the whole pariſh; nor did I ever hear a 'very profane oath all the time I lived in it.

'But to return from ſo agreeable a digreſſion to my 'own affairs, that are much leſs worth your attention. 'In the midſt of all the pleaſures I taſted in this ſweet 'place, and the moſt delightful company, the woman 'and man whom I loved above all things, melancholy 'reflections concerning my unhappy circumſtances 'would often ſteal into my thoughts. My fortune 'was now reduced to leſs than forty pounds a year; I 'had already two children, and my dear Amelia was 'again with child.

'One day the doctor found me ſitting by myſelf, and 'employed in melancholy contemplations on this ſub-'ject. He told me he had obſerved me growing of late 'very ſerious; that he knew the occaſion, and neither 'wondered at, nor blamed me. He then aſked me if I 'had any proſpect of going again into the army; if 'not, what ſcheme of life I propoſed to myſelf.

'I told him, that as I had no powerful friends, I 'could have but little expectations in a military way; 'that I was incapable of thinking of any other ſcheme, 'as all buſineſs required ſome knowledge or experience, 'and likewiſe money to ſet up with; of all which I was 'deſtitute.

"You muſt know then, child," ſaid the doctor, "that I have been thinking on this ſubject as well as "you: for I can think, I promiſe you, with a pleaſant "countenance." Theſe were his words. "As to the "army, perhaps means might be found of getting you "another commiſſion; but my daughter ſeems to have a "violent objection to it; and to be plain, I fancy you "yourſelf will find no glory make you amends for your "abſence from her. And for my part," ſaid he, "I never "think thoſe men wiſe, who for any worldly intereſt "forego the greateſt happineſs of their lives. If I miſ-"take not," ſays he, "a country life, where you could

"be

" be always together, would make you both much hap-
" pier people."

'I answered, that of all things I preferred it most;
'and I believed Amelia was of the same opinion.

'The doctor, after a little hesitation, proposed to me
'to turn farmer, and offered to let me his parsonage,
'which was then become vacant. He said, it was a
'farm which required but little stock, and that little
'should not be wanting. I embraced this offer very ea-
'gerly, and with great thankfulness; and immediately
'repaired to Amelia to communicate it to her, and to
'know her sentiments.

'Amelia received the news with the highest trans-
'ports of joy; she said, that her greatest fear had al-
'ways been of my entering again into the army. She
'was so kind as to say, that all stations of life were
'equal to her, unless as any one afforded her more of
'my company than another. "And as to our chil-
"dren," said she, "let us breed them up to an hum-
"ble fortune; they will be contented with it: for none,"
'added my angel, "deserve happiness, or indeed are
"capable of it, who make any particular station a ne-
"cessary ingredient."

'Thus, Madam, you see me degraded from my for-
'mer rank in life; no longer Captain Booth, but Far-
'mer Booth at your service.

'During my first year's continuance in this new
'scene of life, nothing, I think, remarkable happened;
'the history of one day would, indeed, be the history
'of the whole year.'

'Well, pray then,' said Miss Matthews, 'do let us
'hear the history of that day; I have a strange curi-
'osity to know how you could kill your time; and do,
'if possible, find out the very best day you can.'

'If you command me, Madam,' answered Booth,
'you must yourself be accountable for the dulness of
'the narrative. Nay, I believe, you have imposed a
'very difficult task on me; for the greatest happiness is
'incapable of description. 'I rose,

'I roſe, then, Madam----' 'O, the moment you 'waked, undoubtedly!' ſaid Miſs Matthews.

'Uſually,' ſaid he, 'between five and ſix.' 'I will 'have no uſually,' cried Miſs Matthews; you are confined 'to a day, and it is to be the beſt and happieſt in the year.'

'Nay, Madam,' cries Booth, 'then I muſt tell you 'the day in which Amelia was brought to bed, after a 'painful and dangerous labour; for that I think was 'the happieſt day of my life.'

'I proteſt,' ſaid ſhe, 'you are become Farmer Booth 'indeed. What a happineſs have you painted to my 'imagination! you put me in mind of a newſpaper, 'where my lady ſuch-a-one is delivered of a ſon, to the 'great joy of ſome illuſtrious family.'

'Why then, I do aſſure you, Miſs Matthews, cries 'Booth, 'I ſcarce know a circumſtance that diſtin-'guiſhed one day from another. The whole was one 'continued ſeries of love, health, and tranquillity. Our 'lives reſembled a calm ſea.'

'The dulleſt of all ideas,' cries the lady.

'I know,' ſaid he, 'it muſt appear dull in deſcrip-'tion; for who can deſcribe the pleaſures which the 'morning air gives to one in perfect health; the flow 'of ſpirits which ſprings up from exerciſe; the de-'lights which parents feel from the prattle and inno-'cent follies of their children; the joy with which the 'tender ſmile of a wife inſpires a huſband; or, laſtly, 'the cheerful, ſolid comfort, which a fond couple enjoy 'in each other's converſation!------All theſe pleaſures, 'and every other of which our ſituation was capable, 'we taſted in the higheſt degree. Our happineſs was, 'perhaps, too great; for fortune ſeemed to grow en-'vious of it, and interpoſed one of the moſt cruel acci-'dents that could have befallen us, by robbing us of 'our dear friend the doctor.'---'I am ſorry for it,' ſaid 'Miſs Matthews; 'he was indeed a valuable man, and 'I never heard of his death before.'

'Long may it be before any one hears of it!' cries Booth.

Booth. 'He is, indeed, dead to us; but will, I hope, 'enjoy many happy years of life. You know, Ma-'dam, the obligations he had to his patron the earl; in-'deed, it was impoſſible to be once in his company 'without hearing of them; I am ſure you will neither 'wonder that he was choſen to attend the young lord in 'his travels as his tutor, nor that the good man, how-'ever diſagreeable it might be (as in fact it was) to his 'inclination, ſhould comply with the earneſt requeſt of 'his friend and patron.

'By this means I was not only bereft of the beſt com-'panion in the world, but of the beſt counſellor; a loſs, 'of which I have ſince felt the bitter conſequence; for no 'greater advantage, I am convinced, can arrive to a 'young man who hath any degree of underſtanding, 'than an intimate converſe with one of riper years, who 'is not only able to adviſe, but who knows the man-'ner of adviſing. By this means alone, youth can en-'joy the benefit of the experience of age, and that at a 'time of life when ſuch experience will be of more ſer-'vice to a man than when he hath lived long enough 'to acquire it of himſelf.

'From want of my ſage counſellor, I now fell into 'many errors. The firſt of theſe was in enlarging my 'buſineſs, by adding a farm of one hundred a year to 'the parſonage; in renting which I had alſo as bad a 'bargain as the doctor had before given me a good one. 'The conſequence of which was, that whereas, at the 'end of the firſt year I was worth upwards of fourſcore 'pounds; at the end of the ſecond I was near half that 'ſum worſe (as the phraſe is) than nothing.

'A ſecond folly I was guilty of, in uniting families 'with the curate of the pariſh, who had juſt married, 'as my wife and I thought, a very good ſort of a wo-'man. We had not, however, lived one month toge-'ther, before I plainly perceived this good ſort of wo-'man had taken a great prejudice againſt my Amelia; 'for which, if I had not known ſomething of the hu-

'man

'man paſſions, and that high place which envy holds 'among them, I ſhould not have been able to account; 'for ſo far was my angel from having given her any 'cauſe of diſlike, that ſhe had treated her not only with 'civility, but kindneſs.

'Beſides ſuperiority in beauty, which, I believe, all 'the world would have allowed to Amelia, there was 'another cauſe of this envy, which I am almoſt aſhamed 'to mention, as it may well be called my greateſt 'folly. You are to know then, Madam, that from a 'boy I had been always fond of driving a coach, in 'which I valued myſelf on having ſome ſkill. This, 'perhaps, was an innocent, but I allow it to have been 'a childiſh vanity. As I had an opportunity, there-'fore, of buying an old coach and harneſs very cheap, '(indeed they coſt me but twelve pounds) and as I con-'ſidered the ſame horſes which drew my waggon would 'likewiſe draw my coach, I reſolved on indulging my-'ſelf in the purchaſe.

'The conſequence of ſetting up this poor old coach 'is inconceivable. Before this, as my wife and myſelf 'had very little diſtinguiſhed ourſelves from the other 'farmers and their wives, either in our dreſs or our 'way of living, they treated us as their equals; but 'now they began to conſider us as elevating ourſelves 'into a ſtate of ſuperiority, and immediately began to 'envy, hate, and declare war againſt us. The neigh-'bouring little ſquires, too, were uneaſy to ſee a poor 'renter become their equal in a matter in which they 'place ſo much dignity; and not doubting but it aroſe 'in me from the ſame oſtentation, they began to hate 'me likewiſe, and to turn my equipage into ridicule; 'aſſerting that my horſes, which were as well matched 'as any in the kingdom, were of different colours and 'ſizes; with much more of that kind of wit, the only 'baſis of which is lying.

'But what will appear moſt ſurprizing to you, Ma-'dam, was, that the curate's wife, who being lame,

'had

'had more uſe of the coach than my Amelia, (indeed 'ſhe ſeldom went to church in any other manner) was 'one of my bittereſt enemies on the occaſion. If ſhe 'had ever any diſpute with Amelia, which all the 'ſweetneſs of my poor girl could not ſometimes avoid, 'ſhe was ſure to introduce, with a malicious ſneer, "Though my huſband doth not keep a coach, Ma-"dam." Nay, ſhe took this opportunity to upbraid 'my wife with the loſs of her fortune! alledging, that 'ſome folks might have had as good pretenſions to a 'coach as other folks; and a better too, as they 'brought a better fortune to their huſbands. But that 'all people had not the art of making bricks without 'ſtraw.

'You will wonder, perhaps, Madam, how I can 'remember ſuch ſtuff, which, indeed, was a long time 'only matter of amuſement to both Amelia and myſelf; 'but we at laſt experienced the miſchievous nature of 'envy, and that it tends rather to produce tragical 'than comical events. My neighbours now began to 'conſpire againſt me. They nick-named me, in deri-'ſion, the ſquire farmer. Whatever I bought, I was 'ſure to buy dearer; and when I ſold, I was obliged 'to ſell cheaper than any other. In fact, they were all 'united; and while they every day committed treſpaſſes 'on my lands with impunity, if any of my cattle 'eſcaped into their fields, I was either forced to enter 'into a law-ſuit, or to make amends four-fold for the 'damages ſuſtained.

'The conſequences of all this could be no other 'than that ruin which enſued. Without tiring you 'with particulars, before the end of four years I be-'came involved in debt near three hundred pounds more 'than the value of all my effects. My landlord ſeized 'my ſtock for rent; and, to avoid immediate confine-'ment in priſon, I was forced to leave the country, 'with all that I hold dear in the world, my wife, and 'my poor little family.

'In

'In this condition, I arrived in town five or six days 'ago. I had just taken a lodging in the verge of the 'court, and writ my dear Amelia word where she 'might find me, when she had settled her affairs in the 'best manner she could. That very evening, as I was 'returning home from a coffee-house, a fray happening 'in the street, I endeavoured to assist the injured party, 'when I was seized by the watch, and after being con-'fined all night in the round-house, was conveyed in 'the morning before a justice of the peace, who com-'mitted me hither; where I should probably have 'starved, had I not, from your hands, found a most 'unaccountable preservation. And here, give me leave 'to assure you, my dear Miss Matthews, that whatever 'advantage I may have reaped from your misfortune, 'I sincerely lament it; nor would I have purchased 'any relief at the price of seeing you in this dreadful 'place.'

He spake these last words with great tenderness: for he was a man of consummate good-nature, and had formerly had much affection for this young lady; indeed, more than the generality of people are capable of entertaining for any person whatsoever.

BOOK IV.

CHAP. I.

Containing very mysterious Matter.

MISS Matthews did not in the least fall short of Mr. Booth in expressions of tenderness. Her eyes, the most eloquent orators on such occasions, exerted their utmost force; and, at the conclusion of his speech, she cast a look as languishingly sweet, as ever Cleopatra gave to Anthony. In real fact, this Mr. Booth had been her first love, and had made those impressions on her young heart, which the learned in this branch of philosophy affirm, and perhaps truly, are never to be eradicated.

When Booth had finiſhed his ſtory, a ſilence enſued of ſome minutes; an interval which the painter would deſcribe much better than the writer. Some readers may, however, be able to make pretty pertinent conjectures, by what I have ſaid above, eſpecially when they are told that Miſs Matthews broke the ſilence with a ſigh, and cried, 'Why is Mr. Booth unwilling to 'allow me the happineſs of thinking my misfortunes 'have been of ſome little advantage to him? Sure the 'happy Amelia would not be ſo ſelfiſh to envy me that 'pleaſure. No; not if ſhe was as much the fondeſt as 'ſhe is the happieſt of women.'---'Good Heaven! 'Madam,' ſaid he, 'do you call my poor Amelia the 'happieſt of women!'---'Indeed I do,' anſwered ſhe briſkly: 'O, Mr. Booth! there is a ſpeck of white in 'her fortune, which, when it falls to the lot of a ſenſible woman, makes her full amends for all the croſſes 'which can attend her. Perhaps ſhe may not be ſenſible of it; but if it had been my bleſſed fate---O Mr. 'Booth; could I have thought when we were firſt acquainted, that the moſt agreeable man in the world 'had been capable of making the kind, the tender, 'the affectionate, huſband---the happy Amelia in thoſe 'days was unknown; Heaven had not then given her 'a proſpect of the happineſs that it intended her---but 'yet it did intend it her: for ſure there is a fatality in 'the affairs of love; and the more I reflect on my own life, 'the more I am convinced of it. O Heavens! how a 'thouſand little circumſtances croud into my mind. 'When you firſt marched into our town, you had then 'the colours in your hand; as you paſſed under the 'window where I ſtood, my glove by accident dropt 'into the ſtreet; you ſtooped, took up my glove, and, 'putting it upon the ſpike belonging to your colours, 'lifted it up to the window. Upon this, a young lady, 'who ſtood by, ſaid, "So, Miſs; the young officer "hath accepted your challenge." I bluſhed then, and 'I bluſh now, when I confeſs to you I thought you

'me

'the prettieſt young fellow I had ever ſeen; and, upon 'my ſoul, I believe you was then the prettieſt fellow in 'the world.' Booth here made a low bow, and cried, 'O dear Madam, how ignorant was I of my own hap-'pineſs!'---'Would you really have thought ſo?' anſwered ſhe: 'however, there is ſome politeneſs, if there 'be no ſincerity in what you ſay.' Here the governor of the enchanted caſtle interrupted them, and entering the room without any ceremony, acquainted the lady and gentleman, that it was locking up time; and addreſſing Booth by the name of captain, aſked him if he would not pleaſe to have a bed; adding, that he might have one in the next room to the lady, but that it would come dear; for that he never let a bed in that room under a guinea, nor could he afford it cheaper to his father.

No anſwer was made to this propoſal; but Miſs Matthews, who had already learnt ſome of the ways of the houſe, ſaid, ſhe believed Mr. Booth would like to drink a glaſs of ſomething; upon which the governor immediately trumpeted forth the praiſes of his rack-punch, and without waiting for any farther commands, preſently produced a large bowl of that liquor.

The governor having recommended the goodneſs of his punch by a hearty draught, began to revive the other matter, ſaying, that he was juſt going to bed, and muſt firſt lock up. 'But, ſuppoſe,' ſaid Miſs Matthews, with a ſmile, 'the captain and I ſhould 'have a mind to ſit up all night?'---'With all my 'heart,' ſaid the governor; but I expect a conſideration 'for thoſe matters. For my part, I don't enquire in-'to what doth not concern me; but ſingle and double 'are two things. If I lock up double, I expect half 'a guinea; and I am ſure the captain cannot think 'that's out of the way: it is but the price of a 'bagnio.'

Miſs Matthews's face became of the colour of ſcarlet at thoſe words. However, ſhe muſtered up her ſpi-

rits, and turning to Booth, said, 'What say you, 'captain? for my own part, I had never less inclina-'tion to sleep: which hath the greater charms for you, 'the punch or the pillow?'---'I hope, Madam,' answered Booth, 'you have a better opinion of me, than 'to doubt my preferring Miss Matthews's conversation 'to either.'---'I assure you,' replied she, 'it is no 'compliment to you, to say, I prefer yours to sleep at 'this time.'

The governor then, having received his fee, departed; and turning the key, left the gentleman and lady to themselves.

In imitation of him, we will lock up likewise a scene which we do not think proper to expose to the eyes of the public. If any over-curious readers should be disappointed on this occasion, we will recommend such readers to the apologies with which certain gay ladies have lately been pleased to oblige the world, where they will possibly find every thing recorded that passed at this interval.

But though we decline painting the scene, it is not our intention to conceal from the world the frailty of Mr. Booth, or of his fair partner, who certainly passed that evening in a manner inconsistent with the strict rules of virtue and chastity.

To say the truth, we are much more concerned for the behaviour of the gentleman, than of the lady; not only for his sake, but for the sake of the best woman in the world, whom we should be sorry to consider as yoked to a man of no worth nor honour.

We desire, therefore, the good-natured and candid reader will be pleased to weigh attentively the several unlucky circumstances which occurred so critically, that Fortune seemed to have used her utmost endeavours to ensnare poor Booth's constancy. Let the reader set before his eyes a fine young woman, in a manner a first love, conferring obligations, and using every art to soften, to allure, to win, and to enflame; let him consider

ſider the time and place; let him remember that Mr. Booth was a young fellow in the higheſt vigour of his life; and, laſtly, let him add one ſingle circumſtance, that the parties were alone together; and then if he will not acquit the defendant, be muſt be convicted; for I have nothing more to ſay in his defence.

CHAP. II.

The latter Part of which we expect will pleaſe our Reader better than the former.

A Whole week did our lady and gentleman live in this criminal converſation, in which the happineſs of the former was much more perfect than that of the latter; for though the charms of Miſs Matthews, and her exceſſive endearments, ſometimes lulled every thought in the ſweet lethargy of pleaſure; yet in the intervals of his fits, his virtue alarmed and rouzed him, and brought the image of poor injured Amelia to haunt and torment him. In fact, if we regard this world only, it is the intereſt of every man to be either perfectly good, or completely bad. He had better deſtroy his conſcience, than gently wound it. The many bitter reflections which every bad action coſts a mind in which there are any remains of goodneſs, are not to be compenſated by the higheſt pleaſure which ſuch an action can produce.

So it happened to Mr. Booth. Repentance never failed to follow his tranſgreſſions; and yet ſo perverſe is our judgement, and ſo ſlippery is the deſcent of vice, when once we are entered into it; the ſame crime which he now repented of, became a reaſon for doing that which was to cauſe his future repentance; and he continued to ſin on, becauſe he had begun. His repentance however returned ſtill heavier and heavier, till at laſt it flung him into a melancholy, which Miſs Matthews plainly perceived, and at which ſhe could not avoid expreſſing ſome reſentment in obſcure hints, and ironical compliments on Amelia's ſuperiority to her whole ſex, who could not cloy a gay young fellow

by many years poſſeſſion. She would then repeat the compliments which others had made to her own beauty ------and could not forbear once crying out, 'Upon my 'ſoul, my dear Billy! I believe the chief diſadvantage 'on my ſide is in my ſuperior fondneſs; for love, in 'the minds of men, hath one quality at leaſt of a fever, 'which is to prefer coldneſs in the object. Confeſs, 'dear Will, is there not ſomething vaſtly refreſhing in 'the cool air of a prude?' Booth fetched a deep ſigh, and begged her never more to mention Amelia's name. 'Will,' cries ſhe, 'did that requeſt proceed from the 'motive I could wiſh, I ſhould be the happieſt of wo-'mankind!'---'You would not ſure, Madam,' ſaid Booth, 'deſire a ſacrifice, which I muſt be a villain to 'make to any?'---'Deſire!' anſwered ſhe; 'are there 'any bounds to the deſires of love! have not I been 'ſacrificed? hath not my firſt love been torn from 'my bleeding heart? I claim a prior right------As 'for ſacrifices, I can make them too! and would 'ſacrifice the whole world at the leaſt call of my love.'

Here ſhe delivered a letter to Booth, which ſhe had received within an hour, the contents of which were theſe:

"DEAREST MADAM,

"THOSE only who truly know what love is, can "have any conception of the horrors I felt at "hearing of your confinement at my arrival in town, "which was this morning. I immediately ſent my "lawyer to enquire into the particulars, who brought "me the agreeable news that the man whoſe heart's "blood ought not to be valued at the rate of a ſingle "hair of yours, is entirely out of all danger, and that "you might be admitted to bail. I preſently ordered "him to go with two of my tradeſmen, who are to be "bound in any ſum for your appearance, if he ſhould "be mean enough to proſecute you. Though you "may expect my attorney with you ſoon, I would not "delay ſending this, as I hope the news will be agree-

"able

" able to you. My chariot will attend at the ſame " time to carry you wherever you pleaſe. You may " eaſily gueſs what a violence I have done to myſelf in " not waiting on you in perſon; but I, who know " your delicacy, feared it might offend, and that you " might think me ungenerous enough to hope from " your diſtreſſes an happineſs, which I am reſolved to " owe to your free gift alone; when your good-nature " ſhall induce you to beſtow on me what no man li- " ving can merit. I beg you will pardon all the con- " tents of this haſty letter, and do me the honour of " believing me, deareſt Madam, your moſt paſſionate " admirer, and moſt obedient humble ſervant,

" DAMON."

Booth thought he had ſomewhere before ſeen the ſame hand; but, in his preſent hurry of ſpirits, could not recollect whoſe it was: nor did the lady give him any time for reflection; for he had ſcarce read the letter, when ſhe produced a little bit of paper, and cried out---'Here, Sir; here are the contents which he fears 'will offend me.' She then put a bank-bill of a hundred pounds into Mr. Booth's hands, and aſked him with a ſmile, if he did not think ſhe had reaſon to be offended with ſo much inſolence.

Before Booth could return an anſwer, the governor arrived, and introduced Mr. Rogers the attorney, who acquainted the lady, that he brought her diſcharge from her confinement, and that a chariot waited at the door to attend her wherever ſhe pleaſed.

She received the diſcharge from Mr. Rogers, and ſaid ſhe was very much obliged to the gentleman who employed him, but that ſhe would not make uſe of the chariot, as ſhe had no notion of leaving that place in a triumphant manner; in which reſolution, when the attorney found her obſtinate, he withdrew, as did the governor with many bows, and as many ladyſhips.

They were no ſooner gone, than Booth aſked the lady why ſhe would refuſe the chariot of a gentleman who had

behaved

behaved with ſuch exceſſive reſpect. She looked earneſtly upon him, and cried---'How unkind is that queſtion! Do you imagine I would go and leave you in ſuch a ſituation? Thou knoweſt but little of Caliſta. Why, do you think I would accept this hundred pounds from a man I diſlike, unleſs it was to be ſerviceable to the man I love? I inſiſt on your taking it as your own, and uſing whatever you want of it.'

Booth proteſted in the ſolemneſt manner, that he would not touch a ſhilling of it; ſaying, he had already received too many obligations at her hands, and more than ever he ſhould be able, he feared, to repay. 'How unkind,' anſwered ſhe, 'is every word you ſay! Why will you mention obligations? Love never confers any. It doth every thing for its own ſake. I am not therefore obliged to the man whoſe paſſion makes him generous: for I feel how inconſiderable the whole world would appear to me, if I could throw it after my heart.'

Much more of this kind paſſed; ſhe ſtill preſſing the bank-note upon him, and he as abſolutely refuſing, till Booth left the lady to dreſs herſelf, and went to walk in the area of the priſon.

Miſs Matthews now applied to the governor, to know by what means ſhe might procure the captain his liberty. The governor anſwered, 'As he cannot get bail, it will be a difficult matter; and money to be ſure there muſt be: for people, no doubt, expect to touch on theſe occaſions. When priſoners have not wherewithal as the law requires to entitle themſelves to juſtice, why they muſt be beholden to other people, to give them their liberty; and people will not, to be ſure, ſuffer others to be beholden to them for nothing, whereof there is good reaſon; for how ſhould we all live, if it was not for theſe things!'---'Well, well,' ſaid ſhe, 'and how much will it coſt?'---How much!' anſwered he; 'how much!-Why, let me ſee---.' Here he heſitated

ſtated ſome time, and then anſwered, that for five guineas he would undertake to procure the captain his diſcharge---that being the ſum which he computed to remain in the lady's pocket; for as to the gentleman's, he had long been acquainted with the emptineſs of it.

Miſs Matthews, to whom money was as dirt, (indeed ſhe may be thought not to have known the value of it) delivered him the bank-bill, and bid him get it changed: 'For if the whole,' ſays ſhe, 'will procure 'him his liberty, he ſhall have it this evening.'

'The whole, Madam!' anſwered the governor, as ſoon as he had recovered his breath; for it almoſt forſook him at the ſight of the black word *hundred*. 'No, 'no. There might be people indeed-----but I am not 'one of thoſe. A hundred! no, nor nothing like it. As 'for myſelf, as I ſaid, I will be content with five gui-'neas, and I am ſure that's little enough. What 'other people will expect, I cannot exactly ſay. To 'be ſure, his worſhip's clerk will expect to touch 'pretty handſomely. As for his worſhip himſelf, he 'never touches any thing, that is, not to ſpeak of. 'But then the conſtable will expect ſomething, and the 'watchman muſt have ſomething, and the lawyers on 'both ſides, they muſt have their fees for finiſhing.'--- 'Well,' ſaid ſhe, 'I leave all to you. If it coſts me 'twenty pounds, I will have him diſcharged this af-'ternoon. But you muſt give his diſcharge into my 'hands, without letting the captain know any thing of 'the matter.'

The governor promiſed to obey her commands in every particular; nay, he was ſo very induſtrious, that though dinner was juſt then coming upon the table, at her earneſt requeſt he ſet out immediately on the purpoſe, and went, as he ſaid, in purſuit of the lawyer.

All the other company aſſembled at the table as uſual, where poor Booth was the only perſon out of ſpirits. This was imputed by all preſent to a wrong cauſe; nay, Miſs Matthews herſelf either could not,

or would not, ſuſpect that there was any thing deeper than the deſpair of being ſpeedily diſcharged, that lay heavy on his mind.

However, the mirth of the reſt, and a pretty liberal quantity of punch, which he ſwallowed after dinner, (for Miſs Matthews had ordered a very large bowl at her own expence, to entertain the good company at her farewell) ſo far exhilarated his ſpirits, that when the young lady and he retired to their tea, he had all the marks of gaity in his countenance, and his eyes ſparkled with good-humour.

The gentleman and lady had ſpent about two hours in tea and converſation, when the governor returned, and privately delivered to the lady the diſcharge for her friend, and the ſum of eighty-two pounds five ſhillings; the reſt having been, he ſaid, diſburſed in the buſineſs, of which he was ready at any time to render an exact account.

Miſs Matthews being again alone with Mr. Booth, ſhe put the diſcharge into his hands, deſiring him to aſk her no queſtions; and adding, 'I think, Sir, we have 'neither of us now any thing more do at this place.' She then ſummoned the governor, and ordered a bill of that day's expence, for long ſcores were not uſual there; and at the ſame time ordered a hackney-coach, without having having yet determined whither ſhe would go: but fully determined ſhe was, wherever ſhe went, to take Mr. Booth with her.

The governor was now approaching with a long roll of paper, when a faint voice was heard to cry out haſtily---'Where is he?' And preſently a female ſpectre, all pale and breathleſs, ruſhed into the room, and fell into Mr. Booth's arms, where ſhe immediately fainted away.

Booth made ſhift to ſupport his lovely burden, though he was himſelf in a condition very little different from her's. Miſs Matthews, who preſently recollected the face of Amelia, was ſtruck motionleſs with the ſurprize;

prize; nay, the governor himſelf, though not eaſily moved at ſights of horror, ſtood aghaſt, and neither offered to ſpeak nor ſtir.

Happily for Amelia, the governeſs of the manſions had, out of curioſity, followed her into the room, and was the only uſeful perſon preſent on this occaſion: ſhe immediately called for water, ran to the lady's aſſiſtance, fell to looſening her ſtays, and performed all the offices proper at ſuch a ſeaſon; which had ſo good an effect, that Amelia ſoon recovered the diſorder which the violent agitation of her ſpirits had cauſed, and found herſelf alive and awake in her huſband's arms.

Some tender careſſes, and a ſoft whiſper or two, paſſed privately between Booth and his lady; nor was it without great difficulty that poor Amelia put ſome reſtraint on her fondneſs, in a place ſo improper for a tender interview. She now caſt her eyes round the room, and fixing them on Miſs Matthews, who ſtood like a ſtatue, ſhe ſoon recollected her; and addreſſing her by her name, ſaid----'Sure, Madam, I cannot be 'miſtaken in thoſe features; though meeting you here 'might almoſt make me ſuſpect my memory!'

Miſs Matthews's face was now all covered with ſcarlet. The reader may eaſily believe ſhe was on no account pleaſed with Amelia's preſence; indeed ſhe expected from her ſome of thoſe inſults of which virtuous women are generally ſo liberal to a frail ſiſter: but ſhe was miſtaken; Amelia was not one

Who thought the nation ne'er could thrive,
Till all the whores were burnt alive.

Her virtue could ſupport itſelf with it's own intrinſic worth, without borrowing any aſſiſtance from the vices of other women; and ſhe conſidered their natural infirmities as the objects of pity, not of contempt or abhorrence.

When Amelia, therefore, perceived the viſible confuſion in Miſs Matthews, ſhe preſently called to remembrance

brance some stories which she had imperfectly heard; for, as she was not naturally attentive to scandal, and had kept very little company since her return to England, she was far from being a mistress of the lady's whole history. However, she had heard enough to impute her confusion to the right cause: she advanced to her, and told her she was extremely sorry to meet her in such a place, but hoped that no very great misfortune was the occasion of it.

Miss Matthews began, by degrees, to recover her spirits. She answered, with a reserved air---'I am 'much obliged to you, Madam, for your concern: we 'are all liable to misfortunes in this world. Indeed, I 'know not why I should be much ashamed of being 'in any place where I am in such good company.'

Here Booth interposed. He had before acquainted Amelia in a whisper, that his confinement was at an end. 'The unfortunate accident, my dear,' said he, 'which brought this young lady to this melancholy 'place is entirely determined; and she is now as abso-'lutely at her liberty as myself.'

Amelia imputing the extreme coldness and reserve of the lady to the cause already mentioned, advanced still more and more in proportion as she drew back; till the governor, who had withdrawn some time, returned, and acquainted Miss Matthews that her coach was at the door; upon which, the company soon separated. Amelia and Booth went together in Amelia's coach, and poor Miss Matthews was obliged to retire alone, after having satisfied the demands of the governor, which in one day only had amounted to a pretty considerable sum; for he with great dexterity proportioned his bills to the ability of his guests.

It may seem, perhaps, wonderful to some readers, that Miss Matthews should have maintained that cold reserve towards Amelia, so as barely to keep within the rules of civility, instead of embracing an opportunity which seemed to offer of gaining some degree of intimacy with

with a wife, whoſe huſband ſhe was ſo fond of; but beſides that her ſpirits were entirely diſconcerted by ſo ſudden and unexpected a diſappointment; and beſides the extreme horrors which ſhe conceived at the preſence of her rival, there is, I believe, ſomething ſo outrageouſly ſuſpicious in the nature of all vice, eſpecially when joined with any great degree of pride, that the eyes of thoſe whom we imagine privy to our failings, are intolerable to us, and we are apt to aggravate their opinions to our diſadvantage far beyond the reality.

CHAP. III.

Containing wiſe Obſervations of the Author, and other Matters.

THERE is nothing more difficult than to lay down any fixed and certain rules for happineſs; or indeed to judge with any preciſion of the happineſs of others, from the knowledge of external circumſtances. There is ſometimes a little ſpeck of black in the brighteſt and gayeſt colours of Fortune, which contaminates and deadens the whole. On the contrary, when all without looks dark and diſmal, there is often a ſecret ray of light within the mind, which turns every thing to real joy and gladneſs.

I have in the courſe of my life ſeen many occaſions to make this obſervation; and Mr. Booth was at preſent a very pregnant inſtance of it's truth. He was juſt delivered from a priſon, and in the poſſeſſion of his beloved wife and children; and (which might be imagined greatly to augment his joy) Fortune had done all this for him within an hour, without giving him the leaſt warning or reaſonable expectation of this ſtrange reverſe in his circumſtances; and yet it is certain, that there were very few men in the world more ſeriouſly miſerable than he was at this inſtant. A deep melancholy ſeized his mind, and cold damp ſweats overſpread his perſon, ſo that he was ſcarce animated; and poor Amelia, inſtead of a fond, warm huſband, beſtowed her careſſes on a dull, lifeleſs lump of clay. He endea-

voured, however, at firſt, as much as poſſible, to conceal what he felt, and attempted, what is the hardeſt of all taſks, to act the part of a happy man; but he found no ſupply of ſpirits to carry on this deceit, and would have probably ſunk under this attempt, had not poor Amelia's ſimplicity helped him to another fallacy, in which he had much better ſucceſs.

This worthy woman very plainly perceived the diſorder in her huſband's mind; and having no doubt of the cauſe of it, eſpecially when ſhe ſaw the tears ſtand in his eyes at the ſight of his children, threw her arms round his neck, and embracing him with rapturous fondneſs, cried out, 'My dear Billy, let nothing 'make you uneaſy. Heaven will, I doubt not, pro-'vide for me and theſe poor babes. Great fortunes 'are not neceſſary to happineſs. For my own part, I 'can level my mind with any ſtate; and for thoſe poor 'little things, whatever condition of life we breed 'them to, that will be ſufficient to maintain them in. 'How many thouſands abound in affluence, whoſe for-'tunes are much lower than ours! for it is not from 'nature, but from education and habit, that our wants 'are chiefly derived. Make yourſelf eaſy, therefore, 'my dear love; for you have a wife who will think 'herſelf happy with you, and endeavour to make you 'ſo, in any ſituation. Fear nothing, Billy: induſtry 'will always provide us a wholeſome meal; and I will 'take care that neatneſs and chearfulneſs ſhall make it 'a pleaſant one.'

Booth preſently took the cue which ſhe had given him. He fixed his eyes on her for a minute, with great earneſtneſs and inexpreſſible tenderneſs; and then cried, 'O my Amelia, how much are you my ſuperior in 'every perfection! how wiſe, how great, how noble, 'are your ſentiments! Why can I not imitate what I 'ſo much admire? Why can I not look with your 'conſtancy on thoſe dear little pledges of our loves? 'All my philoſophy is baffled with the thought, that

'my

'my Amelia's children are to ſtruggle with a cruel, 'hard, unfeeling world, and to buffet thoſe waves of 'fortune which have overwhelmed their father. Here, 'I own, I want your firmneſs, and am not without an 'excuſe for wanting it, for am I not the cruel cauſe of 'all your wretchedneſs? Have I not ſtept in between 'you and fortune, and been the curſed obſtacle to all 'your greatneſs and happineſs.'

'Say not ſo, my love,' anſwered ſhe. 'Great I 'might have been, but never happy with any other 'man. Indeed, dear Billy, I laugh at the fears you 'formerly raiſed in me; what ſeemed ſo terrible at a 'diſtance, now it approaches nearer, appears to have 'been a mere bug-bear---and let this comfort you, 'that I look upon myſelf at this day as the happieſt of 'women; nor have I done any thing which I do not 'rejoice in, and would, if I had the gift of preſcience, 'do again.

Booth was ſo overcome with this behaviour, that he had no words to anſwer. To ſay the truth, it was difficult to find any worthy of the occaſion. He threw himſelf proſtrate at her feet, whence poor Amelia was forced to uſe all her ſtrength, as well as her entreaties, to raiſe and replace him in his chair.

Such is ever the fortitude of perfect innocence, and ſuch the depreſſion of guilt in minds not utterly abandoned. Booth was naturally of a ſanguine temper; nor would any ſuch apprehenſions as he mentioned have been ſufficient to have reſtrained his joy at meeting with his Amelia. In fact, a reflection on the injury he had done her was the ſole cauſe of his grief. This it was that enervated his heart, and threw him into agonies which all that profuſion of heroic tenderneſs that the moſt excellent of women intended for his comfort, ſerved only to heighten and aggravate; as the more ſhe roſe in his admiration, the more ſhe quickened his ſenſe of his own unworthineſs.

After a diſagreeable evening, the firſt of that kind

that he had ever paſſed with his Amelia, in which he had the utmoſt difficulty to force a little chearfulneſs, and in which her ſpirits were at length overpowered by diſcerning the oppreſſion on his, they retired to reſt, or rather to miſery, which need not be deſcribed.

The next morning at breakfaſt, Booth began to recover a little from his melancholy, and to taſte the company of his children. He now firſt thought of enquiring of Amelia, by what means ſhe had diſcovered the place of his confinement. Amelia, after gently rebuking him for not having himſelf acquainted her with it, informed him, that it was known all over the country, and that ſhe had traced the original of it to her ſiſter, who had ſpread the news with a malicious joy, and added a circumſtance which would have frightened her to death, had not her knowledge of him made her give little credit to it, which was, that he was committed for murder. But though ſhe had diſcredited this part, ſhe ſaid, the not hearing from him, during ſeveral ſucceſſive poſts, made her too apprehenſive of the reſt. That ſhe got a conveyance, therefore, for herſelf and children to Saliſbury, from whence the ſtage-coach had brought them to town; and having depoſited the children at his lodging, of which he had ſent her an account on his firſt arrival in town, ſhe took a hack, and came directly to the priſon where ſhe heard he was, and where ſhe found him.

Booth excuſed himſelf, and with truth, as to his not having writ: for in fact he had writ twice from the priſon, though he had mentioned nothing of his confinement; but as he ſent away his letters after nine at night, the fellow to whom they were entruſted had burnt them for the ſake of putting the two-pence in his own pocket, or rather in the pocket of the keeper of the next gin-ſhop.

As to the account which Amelia gave him, it ſerved rather to raiſe than to ſatisfy his curioſity. He began to ſuſpect, that ſome perſon had ſeen both him and

Miſs

Miſs Matthews together in the priſon, and had confounded her caſe with his; and this the circumſtance of murder made the more probable. But who this perſon ſhould be, he could not gueſs. After giving himſelf therefore ſome pains in forming conjectures to no purpoſe, he was forced to reſt contented with his ignorance of the real truth.

Two or three days now paſſed without producing any thing remarkable; unleſs it were, that Booth more and more recovered his ſpirits, and had now almoſt regained his former degree of chearfulneſs, when the following letter arrived again to torment him:

'DEAR BILLY,

'TO convince you I am the moſt reaſonable of wo-
'men, I have given you up three whole days to
'the unmoleſted poſſeſſion of my fortunate rival; I can
'refrain no longer from letting you know that I lodge
'in Dean-Street, not far from the church, at the ſign of
'the Pelican and Trumpet; where I expect this even-
'ing to ſee you. Believe me, I am with more affection
'than any other woman in the world can be, my dear
'Billy, your affectionate, fond, doating,

'F. MATTHEWS.'

Booth tore the letter with rage, and threw it into the fire, reſolving never to viſit the lady more, unleſs it was to pay her the money ſhe had lent him, which he was determined to do the very firſt opportunity: for it was not at preſent in his power.

This letter threw him back into his fit of dejection, in which he had not continued long, when a packet from the country brought him the following from his friend Dr. Harriſon.

'Lyons, Jan. 21. N. S.

'SIR,

'THOUGH I am now on my return home, I have
'taken up my pen to communicate to you ſome
'news I have heard from England, which gives me
'much uneaſineſs, and concerning which I can indeed

'deliver my ſentiments with much more eaſe this way
'than any other. In my anſwer to your laſt, I freely
'gave you my opinion, in which it was my misfortune
'to diſapprove of every ſtep you had taken; but thoſe
'were all pardonable errors. Can you be ſo partial to
'yourſelf, upon cool and ſober reflection, to think what
'I am going to mention is ſo? I promiſe you, it appears
'to me a folly of ſo monſtrous a kind, that had I heard
'it from any but a perſon of the higheſt honour, I
'ſhould have rejected it as utterly incredible. I hope
'you already gueſs what I am about to name; ſince
'Heaven forbid your conduct ſhould afford you any
'choice of ſuch groſs inſtances of weakneſs! In a word,
'then, you have ſet up an equipage. What ſhall I in-
'vent in your excuſe, either to others, or to myſelf? In
'truth I can find no excuſe for you; and, what is more,
'I am certain you can find none for yourſelf. I muſt
'deal therefore very plainly and ſincerely with you.
'Vanity is always contemptible; but when joined with
'diſhoneſty, it becomes odious and deteſtable. At
'whoſe expence are you to ſupport this equipage? Is it
'not entirely at the expence of others; and will it not
'finally end in that of your poor wife and children?
'You know you are two years in arrears to me. If I
'could impute this to any extraordinary or common
'accident, I think I ſhould never have mentioned it;
'but I will not ſuffer my money to ſupport the ridicu-
'lous, and, I muſt ſay, criminal vanity of any one.
'I expect therefore to find at my return, that you have
'either diſcharged my whole debt, or your equipage.
'Let me beg you ſeriouſly to conſider your circum-
'ſtances and condition in life, and to remember that
'your ſituation will not juſtify any the leaſt unneceſ-
'ſary expence. "Simply to be poor," ſays my fa-
'vourite Greek hiſtorian, "was not held ſcandalous
"by the wiſe Athenians; but highly ſo, to owe that
"poverty to our own indiſcretion." Preſent my affec-
'tions to Mrs. Booth; and be aſſured, that I ſhall

'not,

'not, without great reaſon, and great pain too, ever 'ceaſe to be,

'Your moſt faithful friend,

'R. HARRISON.'

Had this letter come at any other time, it would have given Booth the moſt ſenſible affliction; but ſo totally had the affair of Miſs Matthews poſſeſſed his mind, that, like a man in a moſt raging fit of the gout, he was ſcarce capable of any additional torture; nay, he even made an uſe of this latter epiſtle, as it ſerved to account to Amelia for that concern which he really felt on another account. The poor deceived lady therefore applied herſelf to give him comfort where he leaſt wanted it. She ſaid he might eaſily perceive that the matter had been miſrepreſented to the doctor, who would not, ſhe was ſure, retain the leaſt anger againſt him when he knew the real truth.

After a ſhort converſation on this ſubject, in which Booth appeared to be greatly conſoled by the arguments of his wife, they parted. He went to take a walk in the Park, and ſhe remained at home to prepare him his dinner.

He was no ſooner departed, than his little boy, not quite ſix years old, ſaid to Amelia, 'La! mamma, 'what is the matter with my poor papa? what makes 'him look ſo as if he was going to cry? He is not 'half ſo merry as he uſed to be in the country.' Amelia anſwered, 'Oh! my dear! your papa is only a 'little thoughtful; he will be merry again ſoon.' Then looking fondly on her children, ſhe burſt into an agony of tears, and cried, 'Oh, heavens! what have 'theſe poor little infants done? Why will the barbarous 'world endeavour to ſtarve them, by depriving us of 'our only friend?---O, my dear, your father is 'ruined, and we are undone.' The children preſently accompanied their mother's tears: and the daughter cried, 'Why, will any body hurt poor papa? hath he 'done any harm to any body?'---'No, my dear child,' ſaid

ſaid the mother, 'he is the beſt man in the world, and 'therefore they hate him.' Upon which the boy, who was extremely ſenſible at his years, anſwered, 'Nay, 'mamma, how can that be? Have not you often 'told me, that if I was good every body would love 'me?'---'All good people will,' anſwered ſhe. 'Why 'don't they love papa, then?' replied the child; 'for 'I am ſure he is very good?'---'So they do my dear,' ſaid the mother; 'but there are more bad people in 'the world, and they will hate you for your goodneſs.' ---'Why then bad people,' cries the child, 'are loved 'by more than the good.'----'No matter for that, 'my dear,' ſaid ſhe; 'the love of one good perſon is 'more worth having, than that of a thouſand wicked 'ones: nay, if there was no ſuch perſon in the world, 'ſtill you muſt be a good boy; for there is one 'in Heaven who will love you, and his love is better 'for you than that of all mankind.'

This little dialogue, we are apprehenſive, will be read with contempt by many; indeed we ſhould not have thought it worth recording, was it not for the excellent example which Amelia here gives to all mothers. This admirable woman never let a day paſs, without inſtructing her children in ſome leſſon of religion and morality. By which means ſhe had, in their tender minds, ſo ſtrongly annexed the ideas of fear and ſhame to every idea of evil of which they were ſuſceptible, that it muſt require great pains and length of habit to ſeparate them. Though ſhe was the tendereſt of mothers, ſhe never ſuffered any ſymptom of malevolence to ſhew itſelf in their moſt trifling actions without diſcouragement, without rebuke; and, if it broke forth with any rancour, without puniſhment. In which ſhe had ſuch ſucceſs, that not the leaſt mark of pride, envy, malice, or ſpite, diſcovered itſelf in any of their little words or deeds.

CHAP.

CHAP. IV.

In which Amelia appears in no unamiable Light.

AMELIA, with the aſſiſtance of a little girl, who was their only ſervant, had dreſſed her dinner; and ſhe had likewiſe dreſſed herſelf as neat as any lady who had a regular ſet of ſervants could have done; when Booth returned, and brought with him his friend James, whom he had met with in the park; and who, as Booth abſolutely refuſed to dine away from his wife, to whom he had promiſed to return, had invited himſelf to dine with him. Amelia had none of that paultry pride, which poſſeſſes ſo many of her ſex, and which diſconcerts their tempers, and gives them the airs and looks of furies, if their huſbands bring in an unexpected gueſt, without giving them timely warning to provide a ſacrifice to their own vanity. Amelia received her huſband's friend with the utmoſt complaiſance and good humour: ſhe made indeed ſome apology for the homelineſs of her dinner; but it was politely turned as a compliment to Mr. James's friendſhip, which could carry him where he was ſure of being ſo ill entertained; and gave not the leaſt hint how magnificently ſhe would have provided, *had ſhe expected the favour of ſo much good company*. A phraſe which is generally meant to contain not only an apology for the lady of the houſe, but a tacit ſatire on her gueſts for their intruſion, and is at leaſt a ſtrong inſinuation that they are not welcome.

Amelia failed not to enquire very earneſtly after her old friend Mrs. James, formerly Miſs Bath, and was very ſorry to find that ſhe was not in town. The truth was, as James had married out of a violent liking of, or appetite to, her perſon, poſſeſſion had ſurfeited him, and he was now grown ſo heartily tired of his wife, that ſhe had very little of his company; ſhe was forced therefore to content herſelf with being the miſtreſs of a large houſe and equipage in the country, ten months in the year by herſelf. The other two he indulged her with

with the diverſions of the town; but then, though they lodged under the ſame roof, ſhe had little more of her huſband's ſociety, than if they had been one hundred miles apart. With all this, as ſhe was a woman of calm paſſions, ſhe made herſelf contented; for ſhe had never had any violent affection for James; the match was of the prudent kind, and to her advantage: for his fortune, by the death of an uncle, was become very conſiderable; and ſhe had gained every thing by the bargain, but a huſband, which her conſtitution ſuffered her to be very well ſatisfied without.

When Amelia, after dinner, retired to her children, James began to talk to his friend concerning his affairs. He adviſed Booth very earneſtly to think of getting into the army, in which he himſelf had met with ſuch ſucceſs, that he had obtained the command of a regiment, to which his brother-in-law was lieutenant-colonel. Theſe preferments they both owed to the favour of fortune only: for though there was no objection to either of their military characters, yet neither of them had any extraordinary deſert; and if merit in the ſervice was a ſufficient recommendation, Booth, who had been twice wounded in the ſiege, ſeemed to have the faireſt pretenſions; but he remained a poor-half-pay lieutenant, and the others were, as we have ſaid, one of them a lieutenant-colonel, and the other had a regiment. Such riſes we often ſee in life, without being able to give any ſatisfactory account of the means, and therefore aſcribe them to the good fortune of the perſon.

Both Colonel James and his brother-in-law were members of parliament: for as the uncle of the former had left him, together with his eſtate, an almoſt certain intereſt in a borough, ſo he choſe to confer this favour on Colonel Bath; a circumſtance which would have been highly immaterial to mention here, but as it ſerves to ſet forth the goodneſs of James, who endeavoured to make up in kindneſs to the family, what he wanted in fondneſs for his wife.

Colonel

Colonel James then endeavoured all in his power to perſuade Booth to think again of a military life, and very kindly offered him his intereſt towards obtaining him a company in the regiment under his command. Booth muſt have been a madman in his preſent circumſtances to have heſitated one moment at accepting ſuch an offer; and he well knew Amelia, notwithſtanding her averſion to the army, was much too wiſe to make the leaſt ſcruple of giving her conſent. Nor was he, as it appeared afterwards, miſtaken in his opinion of his wife's underſtanding: for ſhe made not the leaſt objection when it was communicated to her, but contented herſelf with an expreſs ſtipulation, that wherever he was commanded to go, (for the regiment was now abroad) ſhe would accompany him.

Booth therefore accepted his friend's propoſal with a profuſion of acknowledgments; and it was agreed, that Booth ſhould draw up a memorial of his pretenſions, which Colonel James undertook to preſent to ſome man of power, and to back it with all the force he had.

Nor did the friendſhip of the colonel ſtop here. 'You will excuſe me, dear Booth,' ſaid he, 'if after 'what you have told me,' (for he had been very explicit in revealing his affairs to him) 'I ſuſpect you 'muſt want money at this time. If that be the caſe, 'as I am certain it muſt be, I have fifty pieces at your 'ſervice.' This generoſity brought the tears into Booth's eyes; and he at length confeſſed, that he had not five guineas in the houſe; upon which James gave him a bank-bill for twenty pounds, and ſaid he would give him thirty more the next time he ſaw him.

Thus did this generous colonel (for generous he really was to the higheſt degree) reſtore peace and comfort to this little family; and, by this act of beneficence, make two of the worthieſt people two of the happieſt that evening.

Here, reader, give me leave to ſtop a minute, to lament that ſo few are to be found of this benign diſpoſi-

tion!

tion; that while wantonneſs, vanity, avarice and ambition, are every day rioting and triumphing in the follies and weakneſs, the ruin and deſolation of mankind, ſcarce one man in a thouſand is capable of taſting the happineſs of others. Nay, give me leave to wonder that pride, which is conſtantly ſtruggling, and often impoſing on itſelf to gain ſome little pre-eminence, ſhould ſo ſeldom hint to us the only certain as well as laudable way of ſetting ourſelves above another man; and that is, by becoming his benefactor.

CHAP. V.

Containing an Eulogium upon Innocence, and other grave Matters.

BOOTH paſſed that evening, and all the ſucceeding day, with his Amelia, without the interruption of almoſt a ſingle thought concerning Miſs Matthews, after having determined to go on the Sunday, the only day he could venture without the verge in the preſent ſtate of his affairs, and pay her what ſhe had advanced for him in the priſon. But ſhe had not ſo long patience; for the third day, while he was ſitting with Amelia, a letter was brought to him. As he knew the hand, he immediately put it in his pocket unopened, not without ſuch an alteration in his countenance, that had Amelia, who was then playing with one of the children, caſt her eyes towards him, ſhe muſt have remarked it. This accident, however, luckily gave him time to recover himſelf: for Amelia was ſo deeply engaged with the little one, that ſhe did not even remark the delivery of the letter. The maid ſoon after returned into the room, ſaying, the chairman deſired to know if there was any anſwer to the letter. 'What letter?' cries Booth. 'The letter I gave you juſt now,' anſwered 'the girl. 'Sure,' cries Booth, 'the child is mad; 'you gave me no letter.'---'Yes, indeed I did, Sir,' 'ſaid the poor girl. 'Why then, as ſure as fate,' cries 'Booth, I threw it into the fire in my reverie. Why, 'child, why did you not tell me it was a letter? Bid

'the

'the chairman come up---ſtay, I will go down myſelf; 'for he will otherwiſe dirt the ſtairs with his feet.'

Amelia was gently chiding the girl for her careleſſneſs; when Booth returned, ſaying, it was very true that ſhe had delivered him a letter from Colonel James, and that perhaps it might be of conſequence. 'However,' ſays he, 'I will ſtep to the coffee-houſe, and 'ſend him an account of this ſtrange accident, which I 'know he will pardon in my preſent ſituation.'

Booth was overjoyed at this eſcape, which poor Amelia's total want of all jealouſy and ſuſpicion made it very eaſy for him to accompliſh: but his pleaſure was conſiderably abated, when upon opening the letter, he found it to contain, mixed with ſeveral very ſtrong expreſſions of love, ſome pretty warm ones of the upbraiding kind; but what moſt alarmed him was, a hint that it was in her power (Miſs Matthews's) to make Amelia as miſerable as herſelf. Beſides, the general knowledge of

------*Furens quid fœmina poſſit*,

he had more particular reaſons to apprehend the rage of a lady who had given ſo ſtrong an inſtance how far ſhe could carry her revenge. She had already ſent a chairman to his lodgings, with a poſitive command not to return without an anſwer to her letter. This might of itſelf have poſſibly occaſioned a diſcovery; and he thought he had great reaſon to fear, that if ſhe did not carry matters ſo far as purpoſely and avowedly to reveal the ſecret to Amelia, her indiſcretion would at leaſt effect the diſcovery of that which he would at any price have concealed. Under theſe terrors, he might, I believe, be conſidered as the moſt wretched of human beings.

O innocence, how glorious and happy a portion art thou to the breaſt that poſſeſſes thee! thou feareſt neither the eyes nor the tongues of men. Truth, the moſt powerful of all things, is thy ſtrongeſt friend; and the brighter the light is in which thou art diſplayed, the

the more it diſcovers thy tranſcendent beauties. Guilt, on the contrary, like a baſe thief, ſuſpects every eye that beholds him to be privy to his tranſgreſſions, and every tongue that mentions his name, to be proclaiming them. Fraud and falſhood are his weak and treacherous allies; and he lurks trembling in the dark, dreading every ray of light, leſt it ſhould diſcover him, and give him up to ſhame and puniſhment.

While Booth was walking in the Park with all theſe horrors in his mind, he again met his friend Colonel James, who ſoon took notice of that deep concern which the other was incapable of hiding. After ſome little converſation, Booth ſaid, 'My dear colonel, I am 'ſure I muſt be the moſt inſenſible of men, if I did not 'look on you as the beſt and the trueſt friend; I will, 'therefore, without ſcruple, repoſe a confidence in you 'of the higheſt kind. I have often made you privy to 'my neceſſities, I will now acquaint you with my 'ſhame, provided you have leiſure enough to give me 'a hearing: for I muſt open to you a long hiſtory, 'ſince I will not reveal my fault, without informing 'you, at the ſame time, of thoſe circumſtances which, 'I hope, will in ſome meaſure excuſe it.'

The colonel very readily agreed to give his friend a patient hearing. So they walked directly to a coffee-houſe at the corner of Spring Garden, where, being in a room by themſelves, Booth opened his whole heart, and acquainted the colonel with his amour with Miſs Matthews from the very beginning, to his receiving that letter which had cauſed all his preſent uneaſineſs, and which he now delivered into his friend's hand.

The colonel read the letter very attentively twice over; (he was ſilent, indeed, long enough to have read it oftener:) and then turning to Booth, ſaid, 'Well, Sir; and is it ſo grievous a calamity, to be 'the object of a young lady's affection; eſpecially of 'one whom you allow to be ſo extremely handſome?' ---'Nay, but my dear friend,' cries Booth, 'do not

'jeſt

'jeſt with me; you who know my Amelia.'---'Well, 'my dear friend,' anſwered James, 'and you know 'Amelia, and this lady too---but what would you 'have me do for you?'-----I would have you give me 'your advice,' ſays Booth, 'by what method I ſhall 'get rid of this dreadful woman without a diſcovery.' ---'And do you really,' cries the other, 'deſire to get 'rid of her?'---'Can you doubt it,' ſays Booth, 'after 'what I have communicated to you, and after what 'you yourſelf have ſeen in my family? for I hope, 'notwithſtanding this fatal ſlip, I do not appear to 'you in the light of a profligate.'---'Well,' anſwered James, 'and whatever light I may appear to you in, 'if you are really tired of the lady, and if ſhe be 'really what you have repreſented her, I'll endeavour 'to take her off your hands; but I inſiſt upon it, that 'you do not deceive me in any particular.' Booth proteſted in the moſt ſolemn manner, that every word which he had ſpoken was ſtrictly true; and being aſked whether he would give his honour never more to viſit the lady, he aſſured James that he never would. He then, at his friend's requeſt, delivered him Miſs Matthews's letter, in which was a ſecond direction to her lodgings; and declared to him, that if he could bring him ſafely out of this terrible affair, he ſhould think himſelf to have a ſtill higher obligation to his friendſhip, than any which he had already received from it.

Booth preſſed the colonel to go home with him to dinner; but he excuſed himſelf, being, as he ſaid, already engaged. However, he undertook in the afternoon to do all in his power, that Booth ſhould receive no more alarms from the quarter of Miſs Matthews, whom the colonel undertook to pay all the demands ſhe had on his friend. They then ſeparated: the colonel went to dinner at the King's Arms, and Booth returned in high ſpirits to meet his Amelia.

The next day, early in the morning, the colonel

came to the coffee-house, and sent for his friend, who lodged but at a little distance. The colonel told him he had a little exaggerated the lady's beauty; however, he said, he excused that: 'For you might think 'perhaps,' cries he, 'that your inconstancy to the 'finest woman in the world might want some excuse. 'Be that as it will,' said he, 'you may make yourself 'easy; as it will be, I am convinced, your own fault, 'if you have ever any farther molestation from Miss 'Matthews.'

Booth poured forth very warmly a great profusion of gratitude on this occasion; and nothing more any wise material passed at this interview, which was very short; the colonel being in a great hurry, as he had, he said, some business of very great importance to transact that morning.

The colonel had now seen Booth twice, without remembering to give him the thirty pounds. This the latter imputed entirely to forgetfulness; for he had always found the promises of the former to be equal in value with the notes or bonds of other people. He was more surprized at what happened the next day; when meeting his friend in the Park, he received only a cold salute from him; and though he passed him five or six times, and the colonel was walking with a single officer of no great rank, and with whom he seemed in no earnest conversation; yet could not Booth, who was alone, obtain any farther notice from him.

This gave the poor man some alarm; though he could scarce persuade himself there was any design in all this coldness or forgetfulness. Once he imagined that he had lessened himself in the colonel's opinion, by having discovered his inconstancy to Amelia; but the known character of the other presently cured him of this suspicion, for he was a perfect libertine with regard to women; that being indeed the principal blemish in his character, which otherwise might have deserved much commendation for good-nature, generosity,

and

and friendſhip. But he carried this one to a moſt unpardonable height: and made no ſcruple of openly declaring, that if he ever liked a woman well enough to be uneaſy on her account, he would cure himſelf, if he could, by enjoying her, whatever might be the conſequence.

Booth could not therefore be perſuaded that the colonel would ſo highly reſent, in another, a fault of which he was himſelf moſt notoriouſly guilty. After much conſideration, he could derive this behaviour from nothing better than a capriciouſneſs in his friend's temper, from a kind of inconſtancy of mind, which makes men grow weary of their friends, with no more reaſon than they often are of their miſtreſſes. To ſay the truth, there are jilts in friendſhip as well as in love; and by the behaviour of ſome men in both, one would almoſt imagine that they induſtriouſly ſought to gain the affections of others, with a view only of making the parties miſerable.

This was the conſequence of the colonel's behaviour to Booth. Former calamities had afflicted him; but this almoſt diſtracted him: and the more ſo, as he was not able well to account for ſuch conduct, nor to conceive the leaſt reaſon of it.

Amelia, at his return, preſently perceived the diſturbance in his mind, though he endeavoured with his utmoſt power to hide it; and he was at length prevailed upon by her entreaties to diſcover to her the cauſe of it; which ſhe no ſooner heard, than ſhe applied as judicious a remedy to his diſordered ſpirits, as either of thoſe great mental phyſicians, Tully, or Ariſtotle, could have thought of. She uſed many arguments to perſuade him that he was in an error; and had miſtaken forgetfulneſs and careleſſneſs for a deſigned neglect.

But as this phyſic was only eventually good, and as it's efficacy depended on her being in the right, a point in which ſhe was not apt to be too poſitive, ſhe

thought fit to add ſome conſolation of a more certain and poſitive kind. 'Admit,' ſaid ſhe, 'my dear, 'that Mr. James ſhould prove the unaccountable per-'ſon you have ſuſpected, and ſhould, without being 'able to alledge any cauſe, withdraw his friendſhip 'from you, (for ſurely the accident of burning his 'letter is too trifling and ridiculous to mention) why 'ſhould this grieve you? The obligations he hath 'conferred on you, I allow, ought to make his miſ-'fortunes almoſt your own; but they ſhould not, I 'think, make you ſee his faults ſo very ſenſibly, eſpe-'cially when, by one of the greateſt faults in the world 'committed againſt yourſelf, he hath conſiderably 'leſſened all obligations: for ſure, if the ſame perſon 'who hath contributed to my happineſs at one time, 'doth every thing in his power maliciouſly and wan-'tonly to make me miſerable at another, I am very 'little obliged to ſuch a perſon. And let it be a com-'fort to my dear Billy, that however other friends 'may prove falſe and fickle to him, he hath one friend, 'whom no inconſtancy of her own, nor any change of 'his fortune, nor time, nor age, nor ſickneſs, nor any 'accident, can ever alter; but who will eſteem, will 'love, and doat on him for ever.' So ſaying, ſhe flung her ſnowy arms about his neck, and gave him a careſs ſo tender, that it ſeemed almoſt to balance all the malice of his fate.

And, indeed, the behaviour of Amelia would have made him compleatly happy, in defiance of all adverſe circumſtances, had it not been for thoſe bitter ingredients which he himſelf had thrown into his cup; and which prevented him from truly reliſhing Amelia's ſweetneſs, by cruelly reminding him how unworthy he was of this excellent creature.

Booth did not long remain in the dark as to the conduct of James, which, at firſt, appeared to him to be ſo great a myſtery; for this very afternoon he received a letter from Miſs Matthews, which unravelled the whole

whole affair. By this letter, which was full of bitterneſs and upbraiding, he diſcovered that James was his rival with that lady, and was, indeed, the identical perſon who had ſent the hundred pound note to Miſs Matthews, when in the priſon. He had reaſon to believe, likewiſe, as well by the letter as by other circumſtances, that James had hitherto been an unſucceſsful lover: for the lady, though ſhe had forfeited all title to virtue, had not yet ſo far forfeited all pretenſions to delicacy, as to be, like the dirt in the ſtreet, indifferently common to all. She diſtributed her favours only to thoſe ſhe liked, in which number that gentleman had not the happineſs of being included.

When Booth had made this diſcovery, he was not ſo little verſed in human nature, as any longer to heſitate at the true motive to the colonel's conduct; for he well knew how odious a ſight a happy rival is to an unfortunate lover. I believe he was, in reality, glad to aſſign the cold treatment he had received from his friend, to a cauſe which, however unjuſtifiable, is, at the ſame time, highly natural; and to acquit him of a levity, fickleneſs, and caprice, which he muſt have been unwillingly obliged to have ſeen in a much worſe light.

He now reſolved to take the firſt opportunity of accoſting the colonel, and of coming to a perfect explanation upon the whole matter. He debated likewiſe with himſelf, whether he ſhould not throw himſelf at Amelia's feet, and confeſs a crime to her which he found ſo little hopes of concealing, and which he foreſaw would occaſion him ſo many difficulties and terrors to endeavour to conceal. Happy had it been for him, had he wiſely purſued this ſtep; ſince, in all probability, he would have received immediate forgiveneſs from the beſt of women! but he had not ſufficient reſolution; or, to ſpeak, perhaps, more truly, he had too much pride to confeſs his guilt, and preferred the danger of the higheſt inconveniences to the certainty of being put to the bluſh.

CHAP.

CHAP. VI.

In which may appear, that Violence is ſometimes done to the Name of Love.

WHEN that happy day came in which unhallowed hands are forbidden to contaminate the ſhoulders of the unfortunate, Booth went early to the colonel's houſe; and being admitted to his preſence, began with great freedom, though with great gentleneſs, to complain of his not having dealt with him more openneſs. 'Why, 'my dear colonel,' ſaid he, 'would you not acquaint 'me with that ſecret which this letter hath diſcloſed?' James read the letter, at which his countenance changed more than once; and then, after a ſhort ſilence, ſaid, 'Mr. Booth, I have been to blame; I own it; and you 'upbraid me with juſtice. The true reaſon was, that 'I was aſhamed of my own folly. D---n me, Booth! 'if I have not been a moſt conſummate fool, a very dupe 'to this woman; and ſhe hath a particular pleaſure in 'making me ſo. I know what the impertinence of vir-'tue is, and I can ſubmit to it; but to be treated thus 'by a whore---you muſt forgive me, dear Booth; but 'your ſucceſs was a kind of triumph over me which I 'could not bear. I own, I have not the leaſt reaſon to 'conceive any anger againſt you; and yet, curſe me! 'if I ſhould not have been leſs diſpleaſed at your lying 'with my own wife; nay, I could almoſt have parted 'with half my fortune to you more willingly, than have 'ſuffered you to receive that trifle of my money which 'you received at her hands. However, I aſk your par-'don; and I promiſe you, I will never more think of 'you with the leaſt ill-will on the account of this wo-'man: but as for her, d---n me, if I do not enjoy her 'by ſome means or other, whatever it coſts me; for I 'am already above two hundred pounds out of pocket, 'without having ſcarce had a ſmile in return.'

Booth expreſſed much aſtoniſhment at this declaration; he ſaid he could not conceive how it was poſſible to have ſuch an affection for a woman, who did not ſhew the leaſt inclination to return it. James gave her a hearty

hearty curſe; and ſaid, 'Pox of her inclination! I 'want only the poſſeſſion of her perſon; and that you 'will allow is a very fine one. But, beſides my paſ- 'ſion for her, ſhe hath now piqued my pride; for how 'can a man of my fortune brook being refuſed by a 'whore?'---'Since you are ſet on the buſineſs,' cries Booth, '(you will excuſe my ſaying ſo) I fancy you 'had better change your method of applying to her: 'for, as ſhe is, perhaps, the vaineſt woman upon earth, 'your bounty may probably do you little ſervice; nay, 'may rather actually diſoblige her. Vanity is plainly 'her predominant paſſion, and if you will adminiſter to 'that, it will infallibly throw her into your arms. To 'this I attribute my own unfortunate ſucceſs. While 'ſhe relieved my wants and diſtreſſes, ſhe was daily 'feeding her own vanity; whereas, as every gift of 'yours aſſerted your ſuperiority, it rather offended than 'pleaſed her. Indeed, women generally love to be of 'the obliging ſide; and if we examine their favourites, 'we ſhall find them to be much oftener ſuch as they 'have conferred obligations on, than ſuch as they have 'received them from.'

There was ſomething in this ſpeech which pleaſed the colonel; and he ſaid with a ſmile, 'I don't know how 'it is, Will; but you know women better than I.'--- 'Perhaps, colonel,' anſwered Booth, 'I have ſtudied 'their minds more.'---'I don't however much envy 'you your knowledge,' replied the other: 'for I never 'think their minds worth conſidering. However, I 'hope I ſhall profit a little by your experience with 'Miſs Matthews. Damnation ſeize the proud inſolent 'harlot! the devil take me, if I don't love her more than 'I ever loved a woman!'

The reſt of their converſation turned on Booth's affairs. The colonel again re-aſſumed the part of a friend, gave him the remainder of the money, and promiſed to take the firſt opportunity of laying his memorial before a great man.

Booth was greatly overjoyed at this ſucceſs. Nothing

now

now lay on his mind, but to conceal his frailty from Amelia, to whom he was afraid Miſs Matthews, in the rage of her reſentment, would communicate it. This apprehenſion made him ſtay almoſt conſtantly at home; and he trembled at every knock at the door. His fear moreover betrayed him into a meanneſs which he would have heartily deſpiſed on any other occaſion. This was, to order the maid to deliver him any letter directed to Amelia, at the ſame time ſtrictly charging her not to acquaint her miſtreſs with her having received any ſuch orders.

A ſervant of any acuteneſs would have formed ſtrange conjectures from ſuch an injunction; but this poor girl was of perfect ſimplicity: ſo great indeed was her ſimplicity, that had not Amelia been void of all ſuſpicion of her huſband, the maid would have ſoon after betrayed her maſter.

One afternoon while they were drinking tea, little Betty, ſo was the maid called, came into the room; and calling her maſter forth, delivered him a card which was directed to Amelia. Booth having read the card, on his return into the room, chid the girl for calling him, ſaying, 'If you can read, child, you muſt ſee it was 'directed to your miſtreſs.' To this the girl anſwered pertly enough: 'I am ſure, Sir, you ordered me to 'bring every letter firſt to you.' This hint, with many women, would have been ſufficient to have blown up the whole affair; but Amelia, who heard what the girl ſaid, through the medium of love and confidence, ſaw the matter in a much better light than it deſerved; and looking tenderly on her huſband, ſaid, 'Indeed, my 'love, I muſt blame you for a conduct, which perhaps, 'I ought rather to praiſe, as it proceeds only from the 'extreme tenderneſs of your affection. But why will 'you endeavour to keep any ſecrets from me! believe 'me, for my own ſake, you ought not: for as you 'cannot hide the conſequences, you make me always 'ſuſpect ten times worſe than the reality. While I 'have you and my children well before my eyes, I am ca-

'pable

'pable of facing any news which can arrive; for what ill 'news can come (unleſs, indeed, it concerns my little 'babe in the country) which doth not relate to the 'badneſs of our circumſtances? and thoſe, I thank 'Heaven, we have now a fair proſpect of retrieving! 'Beſides, dear Billy, though my underſtanding be 'much inferior to yours, I have ſometimes had the 'happineſs of luckily hitting on ſome argument which 'hath afforded you comfort. This you know, my dear, 'was the caſe with regard to Colonel James, whom I 'perſuaded you to think you had miſtaken; and you 'ſee the event proved me in the right.' So happily, both for herſelf and Mr. Booth, did the excellence of this good woman's diſpoſition deceive her, and force her to ſee every thing in the moſt advantageous light to her huſband.

The card being now inſpected, was found to contain the compliments of Mrs. James to Mrs. Booth, with an account of her being arrived in town, and having brought with her a very great cold. Amelia was overjoyed with the news of her arrival; and having dreſſed herſelf in the utmoſt hurry, left her children in the care of her huſband, and ran away to pay her reſpects to her friend, whom ſhe loved with a moſt ſincere affection. But how was ſhe diſappointed, when, eager with the utmoſt impatience, and exulting with the thoughts of preſently ſeeing her beloved friend, ſhe was anſwered at the door that the lady was not at home! nor could ſhe, upon telling her name, obtain any admiſſion. This, conſidering the account ſhe had received of the lady's cold, greatly ſurprized her; and ſhe returned home very much vexed at her diſappointment.

Amelia, who had no ſuſpicion that Mrs. James was really at home, and, as the phraſe is, was denied, would have made a ſecond viſit the next morning, had ſhe not been prevented by a cold, which ſhe herſelf now got, and which was attended with a ſlight fever. This confined her ſeveral days to her houſe, during which Booth officiated as her nurſe, and never ſtirred from her.

In

In all this time ſhe heard not a word from Mrs. James, which gave her ſome uneaſineſs, but more aſtoniſhment. The tenth day, when ſhe was perfectly recovered, about nine in the evening, when ſhe and her huſband were juſt going to ſupper, ſhe heard a moſt violent thundering at the door, and preſently after a ruſtling of ſilk upon her ſtair-caſe; at the ſame time a female voice cried out pretty loud, 'Bleſs me! what, 'am I to climb up another pair of ſtairs?' upon which Amelia, who well knew the voice, preſently ran to the door, and uſhered in Mrs. James moſt ſplendidly dreſſed; who put on as formal a countenance, and made as formal a curtſey to her old friend, as if ſhe had been her very diſtant acquaintance.

Poor Amelia, who was going to ruſh into her friend's arms, was ſtruck motionleſs by this behaviour; but recollecting her ſpirits, as ſhe had an excellent preſence of mind, ſhe preſently underſtood what the lady meant, and reſolved to treat her in her own way. Down therefore the company ſat, and ſilence prevailed for ſome time, during which Mrs. James ſurveyed the room with more attention than ſhe would have beſtowed on one much finer. At length the converſation began, in which the weather and the diverſions of the town were well canvaſſed. Amelia, who was a woman of great humour, performed her part to admiration; ſo that a by-ſtander would have doubted, in every other article than dreſs, which of the two was the moſt accompliſhed fine lady.

After a viſit of twenty minutes, during which not a word of any former occurrences was mentioned, nor indeed any ſubject of diſcourſe ſtarted, except only thoſe two abovementioned, Mrs. James roſe from her chair, and retired in the ſame formal manner in which ſhe had approached. We will purſue her, for the ſake of the contraſt, during the reſt of the evening. She went from Amelia directly to a rout, where ſhe ſpent two hours in a crowd of company, talked again and again over the diverſions and news of the town, played two rubbers at

whiſt,

whilſt, and then retired to her own apartment; where having paſſed another hour in undreſſing herſelf, ſhe went to her own bed.

Booth and his wife, the moment their companion was gone, ſat down to ſupper on a piece of cold meat, the remains of their dinner. After which, over a pint of wine, they entertained themſelves for a while with the ridiculous behaviour of their viſitant. But Amelia declaring ſhe rather ſaw her as the object of pity than anger, turned the diſcourſe to pleaſanter topics. The little actions of their children, the former ſcenes and future proſpects of their life, furniſhed them with many pleaſant ideas, and the contemplation of Amelia's recovery threw Booth into raptures. At length they retired, happy in each other.

It is poſſible ſome readers may be no leſs ſurprized at the behaviour of Mrs. James, than was Amelia herſelf, ſince they may have perhaps received ſo favourable an impreſſion of that lady from the account given of her by Mr. Booth, that her preſent demeanour may ſeem unnatural, and inconſiſtent with her former character. But they will be pleaſed to conſider the great alteration in her circumſtances, from a ſtate of dependency on a brother, who was himſelf no better than a ſoldier of fortune, to that of being wife to a man of a very large eſtate, and conſiderable rank in life. And what was her preſent behaviour more than that of a fine lady, who conſidered form and ſhow as eſſential ingredients of human happineſs, and imagined all friendſhip to conſiſt in ceremony, courteſies, meſſages, and viſits? In which opinion ſhe hath the honour to think with much the greater part of one ſex, and no ſmall number of the other.

CHAP. VII.

Containing a very extraordinary and pleaſant Incident.

THE next evening Booth and Amelia went to walk in the Park with their children. They were now on the verge of the parade, and Booth was deſcribing to his wife the ſeveral buildings round it; when, on a ſud-

den, Amelia miſſing her little boy, cried out, 'Where's 'little Billy?' upon which, Booth caſting his eyes over the graſs, ſaw a foot-ſoldier ſhaking the boy at a little diſtance. At this ſight, without making any anſwer to his wife, he leaped over the rails; and running directly up to the fellow, who had a firelock with a bayonet fixed in his hand, he ſeized him by the collar, and tripped up his heels, and at the ſame time wreſted his arms from him. A ſerjeant upon duty ſeeing the affray at ſome diſtance, ran preſently up; and being told what had happened, gave the centinel a hearty curſe, and told him he deſerved to be hanged. A by-ſtander gave this information; for Booth was returned with his little boy to meet Amelia, who ſtaggered towards him as faſt as ſhe could, all pale and breathleſs, and ſcarce able to ſupport her tottering limbs. The ſerjeant now came up to Booth to make an apology for the behaviour of the ſoldier, when of a ſudden he turned almoſt as pale as Amelia herſelf. He ſtood ſilent whilſt Booth was employed in comforting and recovering his wife; and then addreſſing himſelf to him, ſaid, 'Bleſs 'me, lieutenant! could I imagine it had been your 'honour; and was it my little maſter that the raſcal 'uſed ſo! I am glad I did not know it, for I ſhould 'certainly have run my halbert into him.'

Booth preſently recognized his old faithful ſervant Atkinſon, and gave him a hearty greeting; ſaying, he was very glad to ſee him in his preſent ſituation. 'Whatever I am,' anſwered the ſerjeant, 'I ſhall al-'ways think I owe it to your honour.' Then taking the little boy by the hand, he cried, 'What a vaſt fine 'young gentleman maſter is grown!' and curſing the ſoldier's inhumanity, ſwore heartily he would make him pay for it.

As Amelia was much diſordered with her fright, ſhe did not recollect her foſter-brother, till he was introduced to her by Booth; but ſhe no ſooner knew him, than ſhe beſtowed a moſt obliging ſmile on him; and calling him by the name of honeſt Joe, ſaid ſhe was heartily

heartily glad to ſee him in England. 'See, my dear,' cries Booth, 'what preferment your old friend is come 'to. You would ſcarce know him, I believe, in his 'preſent ſtate of finery.'---'I am very well pleaſed to 'ſee it,' anſwered Amelia; 'and I wiſh him joy of 'being made an officer, with all my heart.' In fact, from what Mr. Booth ſaid, joined to the ſerjeant's laced coat, ſhe believed that he had obtained a commiſſion. So weak and abſurd is human vanity, that this miſtake of Amelia's poſſibly put poor Atkinſon out of countenance; for he looked at this inſtant more ſilly than he had ever done in his life; and making her a moſt reſpectful bow, muttered ſomething about obligations, in a ſcarce articulate or intelligible manner.

The ſerjeant had, indeed, among many other qualities, that modeſty which a Latin author honours by the name of ingenuous: nature had given him this, notwithſtanding the meanneſs of his birth; and ſix years converſation in the army had not taken it away. To ſay the truth, he was a noble fellow; and Amelia, by ſuppoſing he had a commiſſion in the guards, had been guilty of no affront to that honourable body.

Booth had a real affection for Atkinſon, though in fact he knew not half his merit. He acquainted him with his lodgings, where he earneſtly deſired to ſee him.

Amelia, who was far from being recovered from the terrors into which the ſeeing her huſband engaged with the ſoldier had thrown her, deſired to go home; nor was ſhe well able to walk without ſome aſſiſtance. While ſhe ſupported herſelf therefore on her huſband's arm, ſhe told Atkinſon, ſhe ſhould be obliged to him, if he would take care of the children. He readily accepted the office; but, upon offering his hand to Miſs, ſhe refuſed, and burſt into tears. Upon which, the tender mother reſigned Booth to her children, and put herſelf under the ſerjeant's protection; who conducted her ſafe home, though ſhe often declared ſhe feared ſhe

ſhould drop down by the way. The fear of which ſo affected the ſerjeant, (for beſides the honour which he himſelf had for the lady, he knew how tenderly his friend loved her) that he was unable to ſpeak; and had not his nerves been ſo ſtrongly braced, that nothing could ſhake them, he had enough in his mind to have ſet them a trembling equally with the lady.

When they arrived at the lodgings, the miſtreſs of the houſe opened the door, who, ſeeing Amelia's condition, threw open the parlour, and begged her to walk in; upon which ſhe immediately flung herſelf into a chair, and all preſent thought ſhe would have fainted away. However, ſhe eſcaped that miſery; and having drank a glaſs of water with a little white wine mixed in it, ſhe began, in a little time to regain her complexion; and at length aſſured Booth that ſhe was perfectly recovered; but declared ſhe had never undergone ſo much, and earneſtly begged him never to be ſo raſh for the future. She then called her little boy, and gently chid him; ſaying, 'You muſt never do ſo more, Billy; 'you ſee what miſchief you might have brought upon 'your father; and what you have made me ſuffer.'--- 'La, mama!' ſaid the child; 'what harm did I do? 'I did not know that people might not walk in the 'green fields in London. I am ſure if I did a fault, 'the man puniſhed me enough for it; for he pinched 'me almoſt through my ſlender arm.' He then bared his little arm, which was greatly diſcoloured by the injury it had received. Booth uttered a moſt dreadful execration at this ſight; and the ſerjeant, who was now preſent, did the like.

Atkinſon now returned to his guard, and went directly to the officer to acquaint him with the ſoldier's inhumanity; but he, who was about fifteen years of age, gave the ſerjeant a great curſe, and ſaid the ſoldier had done very well, for that idle boys ought to be corrected. This however did not ſatisfy poor Atkinſon, who, the next day, as ſoon as the guard was relieved, beat the fellow moſt unmercifully, and told him

he

he would remember him as long as he ſtaid in the regiment.

Thus ended this trifling adventure, which ſome readers will, perhaps, be pleaſed with ſeeing related at full length. None, I think, can fail drawing one obſervation from it; namely, how capable the moſt inſignificant accident is of diſturbing human happineſs, and of producing the moſt unexpected and dreadful events. A reflection which may ſerve to many moral and religious uſes.

This accident produced the firſt acquaintance between the miſtreſs of the houſe and her lodgers; for hitherto they had ſcarce exchanged a word together. But the great concern which the good woman had ſhewn on Amelia's account at this time, was not likely to paſs unobſerved, or unthanked, by either the huſband or wife. Amelia, therefore, as ſoon as ſhe was able to go up ſtairs, invited Mrs. Elliſon (for that was her name) to her apartment, and deſired the favour of her to ſtay to ſupper. She readily complied; and they paſſed a very agreeable evening together, in which the two women ſeemed to have conceived a moſt extraordinary liking to each other.

Though beauty in general doth not greatly recommend one woman to another, as it is too apt to create envy; yet, in caſes where this paſſion doth not interfere, a fine woman is often a pleaſing object even to ſome of her own ſex: eſpecially when her beauty is attended with a certain air of affability, as was that of Amelia in the higheſt degree. She was, indeed, a moſt charming woman; and I know not whether the little ſcar on her noſe did not rather add to than diminiſh her beauty.

Mrs. Elliſon therefore was as much charmed with the lovelineſs of her fair lodger, as with all her other engaging qualites. She was, indeed, ſo taken with Amelia's beauty, that ſhe could not refrain from crying out, in a kind of tranſport of admiration, 'Upon 'my word, Captain Booth, you are the happieſt man

'in the world: your lady is so extremely handsome, 'that one cannot look at her without pleasure!'

This good woman herself had none of these attractive charms to the eye. Her person was short, and immoderately fat; her features were none of the most regular; and her complexion (if indeed she ever had a good one) had considerably suffered by time.

Her good humour and complaisance, however, were highly pleasing to Amelia. Nay, why should we conceal the secret satisfaction which that lady felt from the compliments paid to her person? since such of my readers as like her best, will not be sorry to find that she was a woman.

CHAP. VIII.

Containing various Matters.

A Fortnight had now passed, since Booth had seen or heard from the colonel; which did not a little surprize him, as they had parted so good friends, and as he had so cordially undertaken his cause concerning the memorial, on which all his hopes depended.

The uneasiness which this gave him, farther encreased on finding his friend refused to see him: for he had paid the colonel a visit at nine in the morning, and was told, he was not stirring; and at his return back an hour afterwards, the servant said, his master was gone out: of which Booth was certain of the falshood; for he had, during that whole hour, walked backwards and forwards within sight of the colonel's door, and must have seen him if he had gone out within that time.

The good colonel, however, did not long suffer his friend to continue in this deplorable state of anxiety; for the very next morning Booth received his memorial inclosed in a letter, acquainting him that Mr. James had mentioned his affair to the person he proposed; but that the great man had so many engagements on his hands, that it was impossible for him to make any farther promises at this time.

The cold and distant style of this letter, and indeed the whole behaviour of James, so different to what it had been

been formerly, had ſomething ſo myſterious in it, that it greatly puzzled and perplexed poor Booth; and it was ſo long before he was able to ſolve it, that the reader's curioſity will, perhaps, be obliged to us for not leaving him ſo long in the dark as to this matter. The true reaſon then of the colonel's conduct was this: his unbounded generoſity, together with the unbounded extravagance, and conſequently the great neceſſity of Miſs Matthews, had at length overcome the cruelty of that lady, with whom he likewiſe had luckily no rival. Above all, the deſire of being revenged on Booth, with whom ſhe was to the higheſt degree enraged, had perhaps contributed not a little to his ſucceſs: for ſhe had no ſooner condeſcended to a familiarity with her new lover, and diſcovered that Captain James, of whom ſhe had heard ſo much from Booth, was no other than the identical colonel, than ſhe employed every art of which ſhe was miſtreſs, to make an utter breach of friendſhip between theſe two. For this purpoſe, ſhe did not ſcruple to inſinuate, that the colonel was not at all obliged to the character given of him by his friend; and to the account of this latter ſhe placed moſt of the cruelty which ſhe had ſhewn to the former.

Had the colonel made a proper uſe of his reaſon, and fairly examined the probability of the fact, he could ſcarce have been impoſed upon to believe a matter ſo inconſiſtent with all he knew of Booth, and in which that gentleman muſt have ſinned againſt all the laws of honour without any viſible temptation. But in ſolemn fact, the colonel was ſo intoxicated with his love, that it was in the power of his miſtreſs to have perſuaded him of any thing; beſides, he had an intereſt in giving her credit: for he was not a little pleaſed with finding a reaſon for hating the man, whom he could not help hating without any reaſon, at leaſt, without any which he durſt fairly aſſign even to himſelf. Henceforth therefore he abandoned all friendſhip for Booth, and was more inclined to put him out of the world, than to endeavour any longer at ſupporting him in it.

Booth communicated this letter to his wife, who endeavoured, as usual, to the utmost of her power, to console him under one of the greatest afflictions which, I think, can befal a man; namely, the unkindness of a friend: but he had luckily at the same time the greatest blessing in his possession, the kindness of a faithful and beloved wife. A blessing, however, which, though it compensates most of the evils of life, rather serves to aggravate the misfortune of distressed circumstances, from the consideration of the share which she is to bear in them.

This afternoon Amelia received a second visit from Mrs. Ellison; who acquainted her that she had a present of a ticket for the oratorio, which would carry two persons into the gallery; and therefore begged the favour of her company thither.

Amelia with many thanks acknowledged the civility of Mrs. Ellison, but declined accepting her offer; upon which Booth very strenuously insisted on her going, and said to her, 'My dear, if you knew the satisfaction I 'have in any of your pleasures, I am convinced you 'would not refuse the favour Mrs. Ellison is so kind to 'offer you; for as you are a lover of music, you, who 'have never been at an oratorio, cannot conceive how 'you will be delighted."---'I well know your good-'ness, my dear,' answered Amelia; 'but I cannot 'think of leaving my children without some person 'more proper to take care of them than this poor girl.' Mrs. Ellison removed this objection, by offering her own servant, a very discreet matron, to attend them; but notwithstanding this, and all she could say, with the assistance of Booth, and of the children themselves, Amelia still persisted in her refusal; and the mistress of the house, who knew how far good-breeding allows persons to be pressing on these occasions, took her leave.

She was no sooner departed, than Amelia, looking tenderly on her husband, said, 'How can you, my dear 'creature, think that music hath any charms for me 'at this time! Or, indeed, do you believe that I am

'ca-

'capable of any ſenſation worthy the name of pleaſure, 'when neither you nor my children are preſent, nor 'bear any part of it?'

An officer of the regiment to which Booth had formerly belonged, hearing from Atkinſon where he lodged, now came to pay him a viſit. He told him, that ſeveral of their old acquaintance were to meet the next Wedneſday at a tavern, and very ſtrongly preſſed him to be one of the company. Booth was, in truth, what is called a hearty fellow, and loved now and then to take a chearful glaſs with his friend; but he excuſed himſelf at this time. His friend declared he would take no denial: and he growing very importunate, Amelia at length ſeconded him. Upon this Booth anſwered, 'Well, my dear, ſince you deſire me, I will 'comply; but on one condition, that you go at the 'ſame time to the oratorio.' Amelia thought this requeſt reaſonable enough, and gave her conſent: of which Mrs. Elliſon preſently received the news, and with great ſatisfaction.

It may, perhaps, be aſked, why Booth could go to the tavern, and not to the oratorio with his wife. In truth, then, the tavern was within hallowed ground, that is to ſay, in the verge of the court: for of five officers that were to meet there, three, beſides Booth, were confined to that air, which hath been always found extremely wholeſome to a broken military conſtitution. And here, if the good reader will pardon the pun, he will ſcarce be offended at the obſervation; ſince, how is it poſſible that, without running in debt, any perſon ſhould maintain the dreſs and appearance of a gentleman, whoſe income is not half ſo good as that of a porter? It is true, that this allowance, ſmall as it is, is a great expence to the publick; but if ſeveral more unneceſſary charges were ſpared, the public might, perhaps, bear a little increaſe of this without much feeling it. They would not I am ſure, have equal reaſon to complain at contributing to the maintenance of a ſet of brave fellows,

who,

who, at the hazard of their health, their limbs and their lives, have maintained the ſafety and honour of their country; as when they find themſelves taxed to the ſupport of a ſet of drones, who have not the leaſt merit or claim to their favour; and who without contributing in any manner to the good of the hive, live luxurioufly on the labours of the induſtrious bee.

CHAP. IX.

In which Amelia, with her Friend, goes to the Oratorio.

NOTHING happened between the Monday and the Wedneſday, worthy a place in this hiſtory. Upon the evening of the latter, the two ladies went to the oratorio, and were there time enough to get the firſt row in the gallery. Indeed there was only one perſon in the houſe when they came: for Amelia's inclinations, when ſhe gave a looſe to them, were pretty eager for this diverſion, ſhe being a great lover of muſic, and particularly of Mr. Handel's compoſitions. Mrs. Elliſon was, I ſuppoſe, a great lover likewiſe of muſic, for ſhe was more impatient of the two; which was rather the more extraordinary, as theſe entertainments were not ſuch novelties to her as they were to poor Amelia.

Though our ladies arrived full two hours before they ſaw the back of Mr. Handel; yet this time of expectation did not hang extremely heavy on their hands; for beſides their own chat, they had the company of a gentleman, whom they found at their firſt arrival in the gallery; and who, though plainly, or rather roughly dreſſed, very luckily for the women, happened not only to be well-bred, but a perſon of very lively converſation. The gentleman on his part ſeemed highly charmed with Amelia, and in fact was ſo; for, though he reſtrained himſelf entirely within the rules of good-breeding, yet was he in the higheſt degree officious to catch at every opportunity of ſhewing his reſpect, and doing her little ſervices. He procured her a book and wax-candle, and held the candle for her himſelf during the whole entertainment.

At

At the end of the oratorio, he declared he would not leave the ladies till he had ſeen them ſafe into their chairs or coach; and at the ſame time very earneſtly entreated that he might have the honour of waiting on them. Upon which Mrs. Elliſon, who was a very good humoured woman, anſwered, 'Ay, ſure, Sir, if you 'pleaſe: you have been very obliging to us; and a 'diſh of tea ſhall be at your ſervice at any time:' and then told him where ſhe lived.

The ladies were no ſooner ſeated in their hackney coach, than Mrs. Elliſon burſt into a loud laughter, and cried, 'I'll be hanged, Madam, if you have not made 'a conqueſt to-night; and, what is very pleaſant, I 'believe the poor gentleman takes you for a ſingle lady!' ---'Nay,' anſwered Amelia, very gravely, 'I proteſt 'I began to think at laſt he was rather too particular, 'though he did not venture at a word that I could be 'offended at: but if you fancy any ſuch thing, I am 'ſorry you invited him to drink tea.'---'Why ſo?' replied Mrs. Elliſon: 'are you angry with a man for 'liking you? if you are, you will be angry with al-'moſt every man that ſees you. If I was a man my-'ſelf, I declare I ſhould be in the number of your ad-'mirers. Poor gentleman! I pity him heartily; he 'little knows that you have not a heart to diſpoſe of. 'For my own part, I ſhould not be ſurprized at ſee-'ing a ſerious propoſal of marriage; for I am convin-'ced he is a man of fortune, not only by the politeneſs 'of his addreſs, but by the fineneſs of his linen, and 'that valuable diamond ring on his finger. But you 'will ſee more of him when he comes to tea.'---'In-'deed I ſhall not,' anſwered Amelia; 'though I be-'lieve you only railly me: I hope you have a better 'opinion of me, than to think I would go willingly 'into the company of a man, who had an improper 'liking for me.' Mrs. Elliſon, who was one of the gayeſt women in the world, repeated the words *improper liking* with a laugh; and cried, 'My dear 'Mrs. Booth, believe me, you are too handſome and

'too

'too good-humoured for a prude. How can you affect 'being offended at what I am convinced is the greateſt 'pleaſure of womankind; and chiefly, I believe, of us 'virtuous women? for, I aſſure you, notwithſtanding 'my gaiety, I am as virtuous as any prude in Europe.' ---'Far be it from me, Madam,' ſaid Amelia, 'to 'ſuſpect the contrary of abundance of women, who 'indulge themſelves in much greater freedoms than I 'ſhould take, or have any pleaſure in taking: for I 'ſolemnly proteſt, if I know my own heart, the liking 'of all men, but of one, is a matter quite indifferent to 'me, or rather would be highly diſagreeable.'

This diſcourſe brought them home; where Amelia finding her children aſleep, and her huſband not returned, invited her companion to partake of her homely fare, and down they ſat to ſupper together. The clock ſtruck twelve; and no news being arrived of Booth, Mrs. Elliſon began to expreſs ſome aſtoniſhment at his ſtay, whence ſhe launched into a general reflection on huſbands, and ſoon paſſed to ſome particular invectives on her own. 'Ah, my dear Madam,' ſays ſhe, 'I 'know the preſent ſtate of your mind by what I have 'myſelf often felt formerly. I am no ſtranger to the 'melancholy tone of a midnight clock. It was my 'misfortune to drag on a heavy chain of above fifteen 'years with a ſottiſh yoke-fellow. But how can I 'wonder at my fate, ſince I ſee even your ſuperior 'charms cannot confine a huſband from the bewitching 'pleaſures of a bottle!'---'Indeed, Madam,' ſays Amelia, 'I have no reaſon to complain; Mr. Booth is 'one of the ſobereſt of men: but now and then to 'ſpend a late hour with his friend is, I think, highly 'excuſable.'---'O no doubt,' cries Mrs. Elliſon, 'if 'he can excuſe himſelf; but if I was a man------' Here Booth came in, and interrupted the diſcourſe. Amelia's eyes flamed with joy the moment he appeared; and he diſcovered no leſs pleaſure in ſeeing her. His ſpirits were indeed a little elevated with wine, ſo as to heighten his good-humour, without in the leaſt diſ-

ordering

ordering his underſtanding; and made him ſuch delightful company, that though it was paſt one in the morning, neither his wife nor Mrs. Elliſon thought of their beds during a whole hour.

Early the next morning the ſerjeant came to Mr. Booth's lodgings, and with a melancholy countenance acquainted him, that he had been the night before at an alehouſe, where he heard one Mr. Murphy, an attorney, declare, that he would get a warrant backed againſt one Captain Booth at the next board of green cloth. 'I hope, Sir,' ſaid he, 'your honour will pardon me; 'but, by what he ſaid, I was afraid he meant your 'honour; and therefore I thought it my duty to tell 'you, for I knew the ſame thing happen to a gentleman 'here the other day.'

Booth gave Mr. Atkinſon many thanks for his information. 'I doubt not,' ſaid he, 'but I am the 'perſon meant; for it would be fooliſh in me to deny 'that I am liable to apprehenſions of that ſort.'---'I 'hope, Sir,' ſaid the ſerjeant, 'your honour will ſoon 'have reaſon to fear no man living; but, in the mean 'time, if any accident ſhould happen, my bail is at your 'ſervice as far as it will go; and I am a houſekeeper, 'and can ſwear myſelf worth one hundred pounds.' Which hearty and friendly declaration received all thoſe acknowledgments from Booth which it really deſerved.

The poor gentleman was greatly alarmed at this news; but he was altogether as much ſurprized at Murphy's being the attorney employed againſt him, as all his debts, except only to Captain James, aroſe in the country, where he did not know that Mr. Murphy had any acquaintance. However, he made no doubt that he was the perſon intended, and reſolved to remain a cloſe priſoner in his own lodgings, till he ſaw the event of a propoſal which had been made him in the evening before at the tavern, where an honeſt gentleman, who had a poſt under the government, and who was one of the company, had promiſed to ſerve him with the ſecretary at war; telling him, that

he made no doubt of procuring him whole pay in a regiment abroad, which in his preſent circumſtances was very highly worth his acceptance; when indeed that, and a gaol, ſeemed to be the only alternatives that offered themſelves to his choice.

Mr. Booth and his lady ſpent that afternoon with Mrs. Elliſon. An incident which we ſhould ſcarce have mentioned, had it not been that Amelia gave, on this occaſion, an inſtance of that prudence which ſhould never be off it's guard in married women of delicacy: for before ſhe would conſent to drink tea with Mrs. Elliſon, ſhe made conditions, that the gentleman who had met them at the oratorio ſhould not be let in. Indeed, this circumſpection proved unneceſſary in the preſent inſtance, for no ſuch viſitor ever came; a circumſtance which gave great content to Amelia: for that lady had been a little uneaſy at the raillery of Mrs. Elliſon, and had upon reflection magnified every little compliment made her, and every little civility ſhewn her by the unknown gentleman, far beyond the truth. Theſe imaginations now all ſubſided again; and ſhe imputed all that Mrs. Elliſon had ſaid, either to raillery or miſtake.

A young lady made a fourth with them at whiſt, and likewiſe ſtaid the whole evening. Her name was Bennet. She was about the age of five and twenty; but ſickneſs had given her an older look, and had a good deal diminiſhed her beauty; of which, young as ſhe was, ſhe plainly appeared to have only the remains in her preſent poſſeſſion. She was in one particular the very reverſe of Mrs. Elliſon, being altogether as remarkably grave as the other was gay. This gravity was not however attended with any ſourneſs of temper: on the contrary, ſhe had much ſweetneſs in her countenance, and was perfectly well bred. In ſhort, Amelia imputed her grave deportment to her ill health, and began to entertain a compaſſion for her, which in good minds, that is to ſay, in minds capable of compaſſion, is certain to introduce ſome little degree of love or friendſhip.

Amelia

Amelia was, in ſhort, ſo pleaſed with the converſation of this lady, that, though a woman of no impertinent curioſity, ſhe could not help taking the firſt opportunity of enquiring who ſhe was. Mrs. Elliſon ſaid, that ſhe was an unhappy lady, who had married a young clergyman for love; who, dying of a conſumption, had left her a widow in very indifferent circumſtances. This account made Amelia ſtill pity her more, and conſequently added to the liking which ſhe had already conceived for her. Amelia therefore deſired Mrs. Elliſon to bring her acquainted with Mrs. Bennet, and ſaid ſhe would go any day with her to make that lady a viſit. 'There need be no ceremony,' cried Mrs. Elliſon, 'ſhe is a woman of no form: and as I ſaw 'plainly ſhe was extremely pleaſed with Mrs. Booth, I 'am convinced I can bring her to drink tea with you 'any afternoon you pleaſe.'

The two next days Booth continued at home, highly to the ſatisfaction of his Amelia, who really knew no happineſs out of his company, nor ſcarce any miſery in it. She had, indeed, at all times ſo much of his company when in his power, that ſhe had no occaſion to aſſign any particular reaſon for his ſtaying with her, and conſequently it could give her no cauſe of ſuſpicion. The Saturday one of her children was a little diſordered with a feveriſh complaint, which confined her to her room, and prevented her drinking tea in the afternoon with her huſband, in Mrs. Elliſon's apartment, where a noble lord, a couſin of Mrs. Elliſon's, happened to be preſent: for though that lady was reduced in her circumſtances, and obliged to let out part of her houſe in lodgings, ſhe was born of a good family, and had ſome conſiderable relations.

His lordſhip was not himſelf in any office of ſtate; but his fortune gave him great authority with thoſe who were. Mrs. Elliſon, therefore, very bluntly took an opportunity of recommending Booth to his conſideration. She took the firſt hint from my lord's calling the gentleman captain---to which ſhe anſwered, 'Aye,

'I wiſh your lordſhip would make him ſo. It would 'be but an act of juſtice; and I know it is in your 'power to do much greater things.' She then mentioned Booth's ſervices, and the wounds he had received at the ſiege, of which ſhe had heard a faithful account from Amelia. Booth bluſhed, and was as ſilent as a young virgin at the hearing her own praiſes. His lordſhip anſwered, 'Couſin Elliſon, you know you 'may command my intereſt; nay, I ſhall have a plea-'ſure in ſerving one of Mr. Booth's character: for my 'part, I think merit in all capacities ought to be en-'couraged; but I know the miniſtry are greatly peſ-'tered with ſolicitations at this time. However, Mr. 'Booth may be aſſured I will take the firſt opportunity; 'and, in the mean time, I ſhall be glad of ſeeing him 'any morning he pleaſes.' For all theſe declarations, Booth was not wanting in acknowledgments to the generous peer, any more than he was in ſecret gratitude to the lady who had ſhewn ſo friendly and uncommon a zeal in his favour.

The reader, when he knows the character of this nobleman, may, perhaps, conclude that his ſeeing Booth alone was a lucky circumſtance; for he was ſo paſſionate an admirer of women, that he could ſcarce have eſcaped the attraction of Amelia's beauty. And few men, as I have obſerved, have ſuch diſintereſted generoſity, as to ſerve a huſband the better becauſe they are in love with his wife, unleſs ſhe will condeſcend to pay a price beyond the reach of a virtuous woman.

2 JY 58

END OF THE FIRST VOLUME.